



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

UC-NRLF



\$B 144 409



BANCROFT  
LIBRARY



THE LIBRARY  
OF  
THE UNIVERSITY  
OF CALIFORNIA

Theo H. Crook Collection







*U.S. Commission to investigate*  
**DOCUMENTS**

**RELATING TO THE QUESTION OF BOUNDARY**

**BETWEEN**

**VENEZUELA AND BRITISH GUAYANA.**

---

**SUBMITTED TO THE BOUNDARY COMMISSION  
BY THE COUNSEL OF THE GOVERN-  
MENT OF VENEZUELA.**

---

**VOL. III.**

---

**WASHINGTON, D. C.  
PRESS OF MCGILL & WALLACE  
1896.**

**VOL. III, VEN.—1**

F2331

B72 U5

Good p.f.

v. 813

[Translation.]

**No. XVI.**

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF SIMANCAS.

DEPT. OF STATE.—BUNDLE No. 7412.—FOLIO 67.

---

**Copy of the original letter in cipher (as deciphered) from  
Count de Aranda to the Marquis de Grimaldi, dated in  
Marly, June 14, 1776.**

---

MOST EXCELLENT SIR: I must inform Y. E. that as I know many geographers, I have found one who is very careful and laborious in clearing up the boundaries between the Portuguese possessions and French Guayana in South America, and I have been able to deduce that he is doing it at the direction of an interested party.

He supposes that the two Crowns agreed in the Treaties of Peace that the boundary should be considered the Vincent Pinzon river, by which name it is not found on the maps; but the Portuguese have claimed that this river is the same as the Oyapoco, which empties into the sea at Cape Orange, and appears as a large river.

As there is another small stream bearing the name of Oyapoco on the Island of Juanes, which the Amazon river forms at its mouth, it appears that they here wished this Oyapoco to be the boundary.

I fancy that these ideas are of recent conception, and they might spring from the fact that as this Court has informed itself by reason of the part it is to take in the boundary dispute of the Portuguese with us, and it has seen that in those parts they have spread themselves enormously, it may think of profiting by taking advantage of the occasion and the experience gained that as regards boundaries it always comes out better with Spain than with the others. It may, perhaps, advance at this time the preparatory idea, saying that for the time being, as mediator, it purposes nothing; that hereafter it

expects from the friendship of Spain that it will clear up matters, and afterwards, should we be restored some of what has been taken by the Portuguese, go on taking it unto itself as it has done in Santo Domingo.

It is rumored that a company is being formed to settle and cultivate Guayana, and this news was also given me some twenty days ago by the same geographer who is looking up the boundaries. It may also very well be the case that the mystery of the superior authority for whom he works, is to do the work for the parties interested ; and if I were to express my opinion to Y. E., I should the more regret that the latter should be the cause for removing the boundary question, since the Government not urged would be more easy to persuade, and being urged by the activity of the settlers and their associates would never give ear, for should it do so they would heap injuries upon it.

God preserve Y. E. many years. Your Excellency's most humble servant.

Marly, June 14, 1776.

COUNT DE ARANDA—[a flourish.]

The Most Excellent the Marquis de Grimaldi.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the preceding copy.

Madrid, December 30, 1890.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the above date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XVII.**

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF SIMANCAS.

Dept. of State.—Bundle 7412.—Folios 2, 13.

---

**Copy of the Letter of Count de Aranda, dated in Paris,  
July 20, 1777.**

---

The portfolio is endorsed as follows:

Count de Aranda sets forth what that Court desires to arrange with that of Portugal with respect to the boundaries of Guayana, and he expatiates upon what is advisable for us in this particular, annexing some maps for a better understanding.

He incidentally refers to the late treaties made with regard to the Island of Santo Domingo, and states several objections therein.

Inside.—No. 1080.—I have taken herefrom the paper delivered by D'Vergennes referring to the injuries done to Spain by the boundary treaty with Portugal of 1750.

---

Most Excellent Sir—

MY DEAR SIR: On Saturday, June 28, having gone to Versailles for the sole purpose of paying my respects, I found Count D'Vergennes with more than the usual leisure, which unconsciously led us into some discussions.

Speaking of the deep regret the English would experience because of the news of the suspension of hostilities agreed upon with Portugal (since with the fortune and the superiority of the Spanish arms they would not believe that the Catholic King would so easily relax without being sure that Portugal would succumb to reason, and in consequence the latter would not be at liberty to be an ally of England, as before) M.



D'Vergennes said to me: "*I would like to rely upon H. M. and his Court for a negotiation also with Portugal, and that Count de Florida Blanca should take part therein.*" I replied that I could easily believe that my Court would interest itself in whatever might be satisfactory to France, as also that Count de Florida Blanca would treat the matter as his own, and that H. E. should explain himself whenever he should be pleased so to do.

He told me that he would at once explain himself, and immediately stated that as Guayana faced the Portuguese possessions on the Amazon river, and in the treaty of Utrecht of the year 1713 it had been arranged with Portugal what the boundary should be, nevertheless several differences had arisen, the Court of Lisbon claiming that the *Oyapoco* river was the same as the *Vincent Pinzon*, while the French understood that the *Vincent Pinzon* river differed from the *Oyapoco*, and emptied at Cape Norte. That as our Paraguay boundaries were being adjusted it would be well for Spain to settle matters also between France and Portugal.

Grasping this question with the lights I communicated to Y. E. in my dispatch of the 22d ultimo, No. 1056, and those I had previously indicated, I wished to fully discover the intentions of this Ministry, and I said to M. D'Vergennes that for a better personal understanding of the locality he should let me see the chart or plans upon which he relied, since at a glance I could easily comprehend.

He took out the special map of Guayana made by Bellin in 1763, and a memorial he had drawn up, in which the articles of the treaty of Utrecht are discussed under the supposition that agreeing with the Portuguese on the *Vincent Pinzon* river, the latter is not the *Oyapoco* which empties at Cape Orange, but another very different one which flows into the sea at Cape Norte; and he added that in anticipation he had lately ordered that a guard be placed and some establishment, though small, be located on the left bank of the river known as the *Vincent Pinzon* on that Bellin map.

I asked him if that was his contention, and the boundary which he deemed as belonging to him, and if he limited himself to stopping there without thinking of advancing farther

toward the Amazon river. He answered that they did not contend for more, nor could they, because in the very treaty of Utrecht it had been specified that from the *Vincent Pinzon* river towards the Amazon would belong to Portugal.

With these positive antecedents, I good humoredly asked him why he did not think of addressing himself to my Court for the purpose of treating therewith as a legitimate party and not as a mediating party; since those lands belonged to it and it was very proper that in the pending settlement they should be cleared up. He wondered at my statement, and I satisfied him by proposing that H. E. should take out his own map on which he had drawn the divisional meridians, and he would see from it how clearly he touched Spain and not Portugal.

He was confused, and appealed to the fact that the one France had treated with was Portugal, which country it had thought to be the legitimate owner of those lands. I replied that his idea of negotiating with Count de Florida Blanca was a good one under any form the question might assume; and that he might believe that in any event he would find in him the desire to agree to mediation, were it possible, or to lend himself, on his own part, to any amicable arrangement in case Portugal in good faith should desist from the usurpation she had essayed.

It appeared to me that holding M. D'Vergennes down to this idea would be much more advisable for our own case than for that of the other party, should it arise, and that it would be advisable to bring it at once to a settlement of boundaries with France, if the course of the Marañon or Amazon rivers should be declared ours in the pending settlement with Portugal.

Leaving Count D'Vergennes, I went immediately to my house in Versailles, where I dotted down the matters touched upon, so as to preserve them with accuracy.

Afterwards in Paris I examined the treaty of Utrecht, copying therefrom the pertinent articles which Y. E. will see annexed, and regarding which I shall make to Y. E. the following observations:

In Article VIII France relinquishes forever any claim of

ownership over the lands known as Cape Norte, situated between the *Amazon* and the *Tapoc*, or the *Vincent Pinzon* rivers; by which it therein acknowledges that the *Vincent Pinzon* is the same as the *Tapoc*. Further on it again names the said river as the boundary, in Article XII, and repeats it under the single name of *Vincent Pinzon*, prohibiting its vassals from crossing it to trade or purchase slaves in the lands of Cape Norte.

It is clearly deduced from this that the lands known as the Cape Norte lands must be on the other side of the river, which forms the barrier, and that this river must flow into the sea, leaving the said lands well to its right, as also *Cape Norte*. So that the river newly baptized as the *Vincent Pinzon* discharges its waters on a line with Cape Norte, from which it appears that it was not the one it was endeavored to specify; and more than this, it was acknowledged to be the same as the *Oyapoco* in the map itself. It is shown as a large river, and I do not mistake, discharging its waters next to Cape Orange, hence the artifice with which the said map of Bellin, of the year 1763, was made is shown. It was made expressly to arrogate to themselves what they again wished to claim with time, which is nothing less than as much more as there is from the *Oyapoco* river to the frontier of Dutch Guayana and the Surinam colonies, which is equivalent to doubling the coast front.

It occurred to me to compare the maritime chart of the same author, Bellin, made in 1764, and I find two very curious things therein; one is that he omits giving any name to the *Oyapoco* river, and also to that which should be the *Vincent Pinzon*, according to his map of 1763, in which he names both. The other is that he places the divisional line fifteen leagues further away and distant from Cape Norte, placing it at the *Carche-berry* river, which river, under the same name, and in the same position, he gives in both maps.

There is, moreover, another stronger proof in the map of the same author, made in 1762 for the Maritime Atlas, which consists of five volumes, in small folios; and in the second, of America, he gives a special map of French Guayana, in which he places the *Oyapoco* river, with very little land, on the right

thereof; so that he leaves no doubt that the Oyapoco is the boundary on that side; that the said map agrees with the treaty of Utrecht, and that there is no such river as the *Vincent Pinzon* which can differ from the Oyapoco, which the two sovereigns recognize to be one and the same under the two names.

For the full information of the King I transmit to Y. E., in duplicate, the maps of '63 and '64, assuring you that that of 1763 is identical with that which M. D'Vergennes showed me, and from the same plate, and that I noticed that he had no other in the bundle in this record.

Of the smaller map from the Maritime Atlas of '62 I have been unable to secure copies. Only those necessary for making up the volumes, and none for separate sale, having been printed, there are none procurable. But I have had my draughtsman copy from the complete work which I have the two copies I send; and it is very probable that the same work is to be found in our Department of the Navy, and in the possession of some knowledge seekers who own libraries.

The authority which Mr. D'Vergennes bases on the map of '63 has a savage enemy in that of '64, not so much because of the omission of the name of the said rivers, as because of the *Carcheberry* dividing line. Had they given this river the name of *Vincent Pinzon*, it would accord better with the treaty of Utrecht, since as far as *Cape Norte* there is a sufficient extent of country which might be called *Cape Norte lands*. If to this we add that in the map of '62 it is not extended save in so far as it shows, and therein it runs parallel with the treaty of Utrecht, we find that that of '63 is caught both going and coming.

I have talked with the geographer Buache who is getting up the new map, and without entering into any observations with him regarding the Bellin map, but only generally as to the *Vincent Pinzon* river being the same as the *Oyapoco* and its even being so recognized in the treaty of Utrecht, as though I were supporting the Portuguese, in order to discuss with him, I asked him what he relied upon; what reports or ancient maps guided him: and he replied that he had a small Latin

book relating to Guayana, in which, speaking of *Vincent Pinzon*, one of its discoverers, it says that when he reached a river, to which he gave his name, he was astonished that from its mouth he could discern the North Pole which for some time he had not seen, owing to the course which he had followed on the other side of the line. That if it had been the *Oyapoco*, which is more than four degrees above it to the north, he would have no cause for wondering; and that therefore to reconcile his surprise it was necessary to seek a river which, in that part called Guayana, should be nearer to the line, for then his astonishment would be admissible.

I called to his attention that this astonishment, even were the *Oyapoco* situated further than four degrees, was natural in those times in which navigators knew less of astronomy, the rules of navigation, and instruments for taking the elevations of the poles; that such a statement was too subtle on which to found, alone, such a decision; and several other answers which occurred to me. To all of which he replied that I was right; but that in the necessity of making a map such as it was desired to produce, *il falloit s'acrocher de la moindre chose*.

He added that in that country the name *Oyapoco* given to any small stream was generic, and that in this way the river thought to be the Vincent Pinzon would also be called *Oyapoco*, whereby it would have the same two names of the treaty of Utrecht.

The Portuguese will have material property with respect to these disputes, and should they relinquish pretensions as to the Amazon river, they might grant us those (*sic*) of amity and good faith.

I have consulted other French and English maps, and these generally place the dividing line of the French Guayana at Cape Norte; but as Bellin is the most authoritative, and as such it appears he has been preferred, we have in him all that is necessary for decision in the premises, since none of the others have treated that part specially, but generally, copying each other.

I take it for granted that the subject is that of boundaries on that side, as well as on the other side of the Paraguay, both

because the excess is equally visible, and because it is natural that the King our Master may wish to terminate these troubles at once, especially since the fortune of his arms has placed him in the position to demand it in order to avoid the necessity of again sending them forth at any time, and to avoid having reasons for new invasions.

The mouths of the Amazon river in the possession of Spain are of great import, and even indispensable, for the advantages which America can of itself produce are not to be judged by the few advantages gained up to this time, but by those which the improvement of time and the greater knowledge of its different districts may afford.

From the Province of Quito and the back of Peru the waters flow copiously to the Amazon river. The two Marañones, the old and the new, start from the said Provinces, and with other rivers which join them from several sides—a simple inspection demonstrates the evil consequences of Spain not remaining absolute owner of the confluent of all of them, and its mouth, incorporated in that of the Amazon.

To content France on the coast is very easy, since by giving her what she asks, even without reason, would gain the end, and she does not purpose reaching the course of the Amazon. The most difficult point would be to settle the boundaries inland, since the courses of the rivers which empty on the coast of the legitimate or pretended Guayana are almost all straight, and none crosswise which could be designated partly as one of the principal points of barrier.

Owing to this fact there would be no other way than to arrange the boundary by leagues, counting from the coast on both sides (let us suppose twenty, thirty, or forty, of depth), inland, running afterwards from one side to the other with a line, should the lands not afford some natural demarcation of mountains or valleys; for whatever extent that might be given it will be less prejudicial than uncertainty, the possessions of both Crowns being clearly distinguished and recognized, in order to avoid disputes.

I must bring this precaution to the notice of the King, as I see that the French are seriously thinking of founding a



flourishing colony in Guayana, and they believe that they have all the elements they could desire. I hear speeches, and the possibilities on which they are based, with the views of profits they promise themselves, and, examining the possibilities, I find their ideas attainable, and, above all, I observe that they are very much set on undertaking them.

They count on the great amount of existing and ready money now in this Kingdom and in private hands; on its difficult circulation in Europe for investment in lands, since they do not succeed in giving movement to locked-up capital, nor does the latter have a sufficient outlet in commerce, since the larger merchants do not seek capital with excessive interest, and the smaller merchants do not secure it, owing to the fear of their failure; so that the abundance of money and the natural inclination to invest it in something that will increase it, set the whole nation scheming how to invest its funds. Owing to the want of objects in which to invest, many take the course of placing their money in life estates; with the large profits accruing therefrom they live joyously and spend their fortune in the remainder of their days, the children of many remaining in the street, because with the life of their parents the fund for their maintenance expired.

The population is so excessive that it spreads all over Europe, and they find that it would be better for the stability of the Crown to attract people who would expatriate themselves to some locality that would form a dependency thereof. The national character is adapted to establishments, for at the very first indication of possible gain it throws itself into forming them, without very much consideration of the consequences.

They have imagined here that Cayenne may be an important colony, a place for the overflow of enterprising people with idle capital, and an establishment susceptible of many productions which will contribute to their own commerce, as they are now doing with that of their islands. As, owing to the national wealth and the energy of their character, the Government does not need to make any outlay of its own, but leaves each one to his own devices and protects him wherever he may establish himself, this sovereign and his ministry are inclined

to favor every similar enterprise in countries which it owns. Afterwards the human multiplication will go on increasing of itself; the Government will assist its advances, and should the line of advance not be restricted by the neighboring nations it would progress without any reasonable means of restraining it, as there does not exist any formal and indisputable boundary line acknowledged through the solemn authenticity of a treaty. Let Spain reflect, without resorting to history, what has lately transpired with the boundaries of Santo Domingo in America and those of the Alduides in Europe.

I do not pretend that my opinion will prevail—I express it solely as suggestive in a matter that merits attention at this time, as the purpose is to clear up those localities; and should they belong to Spain, she has the means now to combine in the operation, for I do not doubt that France will freely lend herself at the moment, and everything may depend on what is given her more or less, which will always be advantageous to Spain, so as to settle the results at once.

Should this happy event occur, I beg Y. E. to study well the treaty of Police concluded in Santo Domingo, for the reason that it takes Y. E. unprepared, not having had aught to do but to sign a matter agreed to long before your entry into the Ministry where you now are.

I leave aside the matter of the boundaries, regarding which the King, being master, was not disposed to claim the much larger share which would have been given him; as also the unheard-of circumstance of entrusting to his Ambassador the pursuit of a matter, establishing the extent to which he could yield, and not allowing him other advantages, and discovering to the opposing party the order and rules of his conduct, thereby discrediting him with his own sovereign and depriving him of power in the court of his residence, on the ground of stubbornness.

I was a good vassal in noticing everything that occurred and in reporting everything I could repeat. I did even more, for, in my own handwriting, in January, 1775, and in terms that could have been received without offence, I expressed myself regarding the unprotected condition in which my per-

son and the interests of the King were placed, receiving in reply evasions which implicated H. M. and another Minister as being the cause of such publication. I had to halt before such respectable barriers, and the taking from my hands of the negotiations followed, without my having again known of it through my court until Y. E. communicated to me its consummation. Whether this was more advantageous than that which was on foot, time will demonstrate, and it will also bring out the best servitors of the King.

Returning, then, to the treaty of Police, because of the connection that it may have with French Guayana in case matters are adjusted, I shall say to Y. E. that some of the provisions thereof so far from having settled the good harmony and safety of the Island of Santo Domingo, they will be reasons for its loss, or of a disgraceful vassalage to prevent it, and hence the aggrandizement and stability of the French part are what will laugh at us to their content.

With all its activity and efforts, the French Colony has been, up to the present, without any stable existence, wavering ever in the items of exposing the troops of its coast guard to desertions, and its navy to the same; of losing its fugitive negroes without indemnity, and to want of the daily supply of fresh food, for which reasons those establishments were very expensive; and if the treaty had limited itself to the matter of boundaries, even though the King should accord it greater latitude on some immaterial points, such as the return of offenders, the pursuit of runaway slaves, the transit of troops for their comfort, and possible aid in case of a war, it would not be objectionable; because the uncertainty of the other articles would have been an undying canker which would not have allowed that Colony to flourish, and would have had it always attenuated.

I, who daily hear the parties interested speak, know from them themselves that in the fear of losing their slaves they were always on the coals, and to prevent their flight they treated them better as well in the way of food, which cost them more, as in the way of giving them less work so as not to exasperate them, thereby deriving less benefit therefrom. All

that was left was to sell their plantations at reduced prices and become disgusted, doubting their ability to increase their wealth.

Their dependence in the way of meat and of other articles which the Spanish part produces was also a curb which made them think of providing themselves by sea, and at a greater cost, in order that they might not lack the things necessary to their maintenance.

Now, by the treaty of Police, they count on the retention of the troops, and of the sailors, who will say always that they are enlisted, for then there will be as many negroes as there really are, owing to the moderate expense charged for their return, and under this assurance they can force them to perform everything their human strength may permit, without sparing ill treatment, or showing compassion.

The Official residing respectively, in the Capitals of the two Nations, places the French Nation in the position of enjoying the fullest observance of the points favoring her, for since it has been so established expressly for such points and for a formal treaty, it is neither admissible to break away therefrom nor to fail to grant all the petitions for which the residence was instituted.

I well understand that any measure of good harmony, and above all, in distant countries, may be very advantageous, but I am also of the opinion that it will be so when the measure of reciprocity shall afford equal advantages, for it is necessary that there should be the same interest on both sides, for otherwise it is neither reasonable nor tolerable. Let us see if in this case the Spanish benefits correspond to the French.

The Frenchman treats his negroes badly, and of these an infinite number ran away, taking refuge in the Spanish dominion.

The Spaniard treats his slaves better, not one of which to ten of the French runs away, because they moreover know that among the latter they would be treated worse; therefore, there is no proportion.

The French troops and enrolled sailors deserted from natural inclination and to seek their liberty. The Spanish do not,

as there were no troops except one battalion of men already settled, who counted on finishing their days in that career, and because the vessels of the King did not frequent that island ; so that for this reason, as well as because of less inclination to flight, there was no proportion in the matter of deserters. Therefore, neither is there discoverable in this particular a reciprocal interest in what was agreed upon.

The protection accorded to the Commissioners for the apprehension of fugitives, as though they were native authorities, is tantamount to having opened our own territory to the foreigner, and giving him community of interest in property. Think of the number of fugitives there would be, considering the character and qualities of the two nations, and the enormous difference, in which there is no mutual profit, will stand out.

The article regarding the exportation of beef, although it appears to be limited to the method most convenient to the *Spanish Government*, is weakened by the expression, "*and which may be less burdensome to the French*," and much more by the privilege granted to their contractors to go over themselves to make the purchases with no other condition except that of passports to take out the beef; and in order to refuse the passports it is necessary that there shall be an evident scarcity of beef, which shall excuse the breaking of so solemn a Convention, and making it apparent that the domestic necessity is so urgent that its notoriety shall warrant the just refusal to allow the exportation.

If the refusal is not founded at the time on indispensable necessity, or should they not desire to understand it, although clearer than the sun, behold a motive for discussion, which can have no other settlement than to submissively give way before the will of one who makes demands with a treaty in hand.

They already interpret that the clause "*in the manner most convenient to the Spanish Government*," does not refer to the power to deny the provisions, but to the manner of paying for them in cash, or by the introduction of articles in exchange and trade.

Had this article been framed in less precise terms, and stated generally that the Spanish party would endeavor to afford the assistance it could in that way, being less bound than by the clause inserted, I not only say that it would not be strange, but that one of the cares of the Spanish Government should be the increase of cattle, and to facilitate their dispatch in the French part by Spanish owners or resellers, who should reap to their own benefit all the profit of that traffic, others from outside not coming to run all over the Island under the pretext of seeking an article, with the acquired right to so do.

If this subject had been left independent and its increase be watched over, being strict or tolerant with regard to its sale according to the merits of the colonist, the latter would be more moderate, and would never have so powerful a title to formulate a complaint or an unanswerable demand, founded on a refusal which might be used as a pretext to claim that as the treaty had not been observed in all its parts by Spain it had been violated, and the doors would again be opened to extension.

I repeat to Y. E. that with the articles relating to deserters from the land and enrolled sea forces, to fugitive slaves, to purchases of beef opened to Spanish residents, or French contractors, to the permanent official resident in Santo Domingo, as an overseer or Interventor in the Government with the title and standing which the treaty gives him, France, so far as the profit is concerned, becomes a joint owner of the Spanish part. I would be glad if we could have an equal right in the French part.

I return to my subject of French Guayana, on which I have expressed to Y. E. the considerations which occur to me with respect to the treaty of Police in Santo Domingo, in order that should the case arise of being confronted therewith, the prudence and talent of Y. E. shall reflect upon the opinion you shall give to the King upon such a subject; and whether it is advisable that what is agreed upon shall be limited to the matter of boundaries alone, without entering into the other particulars.



This matter not being one to be sent in the ordinary way, I have been forced to delay it until a safe occasion like this. I should have been glad to have had the occasion before, because all its thoughts, although there may be some vague ones, would reach Y. E. beforehand, especially should the Amazon river be determined to be ours, so as to be forwarned of the way of thinking and intentions of France with respect to her Guayana.

Although this Ministry endeavors to dissemble its idea of not intervening in our arrangement with Portugal, I know that it has it in its heart, for, as I treat all with sufficient frankness, nevertheless there escapes from some of the officials one or another expression which indicates it to me, and which finally proves it, hearing it from all, some more, some less dissembling.

Y. E. will permit me to congratulate the prudent resolution of the King and the wise influence of Y. E. in having applied all possible secrecy to the negotiation, for if these people had intervened Y. E. would have found himself much embarrassed in persuading the Portuguese to do what they will of themselves do without other influence. It does honor to the King and to his Ministry to act without depending on others, and it will make an impression on this Court to begin to see that we can act alone. Would to God that they could have understood it before, for it has made flesh and blood of our Union. This Union is advisable, it merits and deserves to be made the object of our greatest consideration; but with measured and reciprocal convenience, and with more caution in the future than that which we have had as a general rule, without noticing the infinite tricks they have played on us.

It is my duty to state with clearness whatever I observe, for the Ministers of H. M. at other Courts can not inform him regarding this one, and however poorly the Minister residing therein may do it, he can nevertheless say more than those who are absent.

Let me discharge my duty, and the King may or may not appreciate my information; at least the Royal generosity will take cognizance that it comes from an open heart and a true love for his Royal service and the advantages of the Monarchy.

Having everything up to this point ready for the extraordinary mail, I went to Versailles on the fifth instant, and Count D'Vergennes asked me if I knew the status of our negotiation with Portugal; I replied that I did not, but if H. E. knew anything of it and would be willing to inform me I should be grateful. He told me that he did not know anything more than that, according to advices from the Ambassador, there had been held a formal session between Y. E. and the Ambassador of Portugal; that the Marquis de Ossun having been able to acquire some light as to whether the settlement had been reached, and having entered into a discussion with Y. E., Y. E. had indicated to him that there were different points; that not all could be decided at once; that upon the principal points there was a good disposition; that some of them would have to be left for the future; and Monsieur D'Vergennes again sounded me as to what my judgment was of the status of the negotiation.

As I merited from the generosity of the King receiving through Y. E. some light as to his Royal intention regarding the manner and secrecy of conducting the negotiation, through the plausible considerations expressed in Y. E.'s number 2 of the 11th of June, with the extraordinary dispatch in which there was also communicated the declaration of the armistice to be transmitted to this Court; I grasped the opportunity to dazzle M. D'Vergennes, and I followed up the idea that the generosity of the King, previously moved by the clamors of the Most Faithful Queens, and made tender by the exclamations that they had made to him so soon as they were at liberty to do so, seeing himself at the same time with the happy result of the expedition against the Island of Santa Catalina, and the probable hope that in its prosecution the subsequent success of his arms would have continued being equally good, he would have loaned himself to the suspension of hostilities so soon as he was persuaded of the different disposition of the Court of Lisbon, and of the justice of his cause, especially if H. M. did not think to carry his pretensions to the strictness to which he could carry the same, but to rather moderate himself therein in order that Portugal should have a lesson in prudence and an irresistible stimulant to come to terms.

That this first cause being natural, I would not be surprised that the conversation begun should be longer than it would have been if the King, my master, had not condescended to an armistice without first establishing the principal points; and in this way many conferences would be held without concluding therein anything advantageous until the Catholic King should remonstrate with energy against the abuse of so much talk, leading to no practical result.

I did not understand what effect my sally had upon him, since he continued the interview, saying that the result of all this would be to take the Colony of Sacramento, as I did not well know the damage she caused to Spain, not only by reason of smuggling, but also because the English might go there as a Portuguese dominion, navigating by the La Plata river, under such a pretext.

I replied that it was true; that the Colony would be the apple of discord if we did not incorporate it, and at the same time he opened his portfolio, took a paper therefrom, and said to me, I wish Y. E. to see a memorial we have here of the grievances of Spain through the intrusions of the Portuguese, and the treaty of 1750, had it subsisted. I asked him if I could see it at my leisure, and he said to me that I could, and might even make a copy thereof, which I herewith transmit to Y. E.

I observed many twistings in Monsieur D'Vergennes in the endeavor to ask if our negotiation with Portugal would embrace many points, and I, desiring to be evasive and to harmonize with what I had already told him, spoke up expressing myself as regretting that the King of Portugal had died, and that Pombal had left his chair, because with them the King would have been firmer, his sword once drawn and his pride excited; that this thing of having women intervening easily arranged many things; and I went on dilating upon this text as though I was ignorant of the state of the negotiation.

I greatly fear that the having given me with so much frankness the said paper was to induce me to speak out thoughtlessly with respect to the foregoing ideas touched upon in different articles or speeches, for if Y. E. will observe the said

memorial he will find therein an infinity of points in which there are materials upon which to spread oneself. Upon all of them I have feigned ignorance upon this occasion, praising the paper to M. D'Vergennes, and saying to him that in it there could be well seen the interest that France took in the stability of Spain.

I have just had two printed copies of the small map of Belin, which I send to Y. E., with those drawn by hand, as at all times the engraved ones will be more trustworthy.

God preserve Y. E. many years.

Paris, July 20, 1777. Most Excellent Sir, Y. E.'s humble servant,

COUNT DE ARANDA.

To the Count de Florida Blanca.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the foregoing copy.

Madrid, December 30, 1890.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the above date.

Caracas, March the 6th, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XVIII.**

Case 131.—Shelf 2.—Bundle 17.

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIAS —(SEVILLE.)

---

1788.

---

**Complete Mixed-chorographic description of the Province of Guayana, wherein is given an account of the rivers affording its means of communication, of its population, arable lands, its dense forests, products, etc.; and means conducive to its advancement are proposed. Written by Don Miguel Marmion.**

---

Containing an index of other documents accompanying this description.

General index, comprising the three divisions of the respective records and documents accompanying the Mixed chorographic description of the Province of Guayana; the statement and plan of defence, and the report regarding the reconnoissance of forests which has just been concluded at the mouths and the channels of the Orinoco, and upon the establishment of lumber camps which, on the day of their date are, by the Government, transmitted to the Most Excellent Sir Knight Friar Don Antonio Valdes, Secretary of State and of the Department of the Indias.

*Documents accompanying the Mixed chorographic description.*

A letter of transmittal.

Chart of the Orinoco river from its mouth to the capital city, Nueva Guayana.

No. 1. General statement of the population and number of souls, divided into classes and castes.

No. 2. Statement of the revenues from the Royal taxes, and the pensions which affect the Royal Treasury.

*Documents accompanying the statement and plan of defence.*

A letter of transmittal.

No. 3. Statement of the forces of the militia, white and mixed, of infantry and cavalry, and statement of the services of the white officers.

No. 4. Plans and profiles of the fortification of the Presidio of old Guayana.

No. 5. Plan of the principal part of the Island of Faxardo.

No. 6. Plan of the capital city of Guayana and its environs, stores of artillery, arms, ammunition, and other war supplies.

*Documents accompanying the report regarding the reconnaissance of forests and establishment of lumber camps.*

A letter of transmittal.

No. 7. General statement of the building lumber inspected and marked.

No. 8. Report of the Governor of Guayana, replies of the Intendent of Caracas, of the Governor of Trinidad, and of the Constructor appointed by the King, proving the good quality and abundance of timber, with his opinion regarding the shipyard on the Orinoco.

No. 9. Chart by an expert showing the course, the local disposition of the coast of the Orinoco, its Boca de Navios, and other matters appearing thereon.

No. 10. A notice of the Ytave resin and the Chiqui-Chiqui or Piasan, both productions of the upper Orinoco, the first of which serves for pitch, and with the second of which cables of tried quality are made.

Guayana, August 7, 1788.

MIGUEL MARMIÓN—[a flourish].

NOTE.—That the plans above mentioned go separately in a wooden case, marked: "To the Most Excellent Sir Knight, Friar Don Antonio Valdes, Secretary of State and of the Department of the Indias."

Date, *ut supra*.

MARMION—[a flourish.]



*Letter of Transmittal.*

MOST EXCELLENT SIR: From the annexed Mixed chorographic description of the Province of Guayana, which I address to Y. E., you will see the present deplorable state of the population, agriculture, and trade, and the reflections I set forth as to the means which seem to me most conducive to their investigation and greater encouragement. Should my thoughts be fortunate enough to merit in any degree the approval of Y. E., I pray you with the most profound veneration and respect to be pleased to lay them at the Royal feet of H. M.

Through the Chevalier Governor of the Province of Caracas I send Y. E. the duplicate of the said description, in order that his report may serve to throw light upon the subject of which it treats.

God preserve Y. E. many years.

Guayana, August 6, 1788. Most Excellent Sir.

MIGUEL MARMIÓN—[a flourish.]

The Most Excellent Sir Knight, Friar Don Antonio Valdes.

---

*Mixed-chorographic description of the Province of Guayana, in which is given a relation of the rivers bathing it and affording its communications, of its population, its adaptable arable lands, its dense forests, products, and trade; and in which some means best adapted and conducive to their investigation and advancement are proposed.*

The whole of the Province of Guayana includes the possessions of the Portuguese, French, and Dutch. It has a thousand leagues, a little more or less, of circumference from the mouths of the Orinoco to San Carlos, where the Casiquiari empties into the Rio Negro, its waters following on down with those of the Amazon, which empties into the Atlantic Ocean, and, taking a turn to the west, following the coast up to the very mouths of the Orinoco, the last of which to the leeward flows into the Triste Gulf, facing Port of Spain, on the Island of Trinidad.

The part of this territory which Spain possesses on the east borders on the Dutch colonies of Esquivo, Demerari, Bervis, and Surinam, and on the French colony of Cayenne. On the south, on the Portuguese colonies of Amazonas and Rio Negro. On the west and north, on the upper and lower Orinoco, which separates it from the Kingdom of Santa Fé, and from the Provinces of Barinas, Caracas, and Cumana; a great part of this vast continent, particularly towards its center, being occupied by several nations of savage Indians, many of them not well known and difficult to subjugate, owing to the great distances separating the populated territories, and to their manner of living, always wandering or ambushed in the density of their forests and woods, and above all owing to their attachment to and great love for independence, which they prefer to all the greater comforts of civil and rational life.

This Province, owing to its situation the most advantageous, and first possession or seat of all the Continent of terra firma in America, and the one which through the great Orinoco river should be considered as the gateway to the interior of the Provinces of Cumana, Caracas, Barinas, and the Kingdom of Santa Fé, and which, serving as a protecting wall in case of invasion, must prevent the enemy gaining access to all of them, affords a short voyage to Spain, and the most advantageous commerce, whenever it shall be encouraged, owing to the facility of transporting by water the products of all those Provinces to the Capital, or maritime port thereof, by the navigable rivers which flow into the Orinoco. Lastly, it is a country whose importance and the certainty of whose possession justice demands on all occasions the most careful vigilance, because upon its retention depends in great part that of the said Provinces. To prove this, a description of the local features of the Orinoco and of the avenues it furnishes all the territories through the minor rivers tributary to it will suffice; but before entering upon this, and so as not to confuse the subject, it is advisable to convey an idea of the Esquivo, Masuruni, and Cuyuni rivers, because of their own importance and because of the relation they have to the principal subject.

### **Esquivo River**

Flows into the sea twenty-eight leagues to windward of the *Boca de Navios* of the Orinoco; flows north and south eighteen leagues inland, at which distance the Masuruni and Cuyuni disembogue into it. From this point it inclines to the south-east and reaches the foot of Cerro Dorado and the shores of Lake Parime, where its source is situated, and on the east of these are the sources of the Berbis and Surinam rivers in the territory occupied by the fugitive negroes from the Dutch colonies, whose procreation and union with the savage Indians may one day give trouble to the inhabitants of these Provinces.

### **The Masuruni**

From its junction with the river Esquivo runs to the south, and at a distance of from ten to twelve leagues it forms the figure of a half star with three branches, which, running in different directions, have their sources between the Esquivo and the Caroni chico.

### **The Cuyuni**

Claims the greatest attention in this part of the Province, and, from where it empties into the Esquivo river, runs from east to west to near the Caroni river, where the Yuruari empties into it on the northeast, and the Supamo on the south, which latter river flows from its source in the hills bearing its name, near the fork formed by the Caroni and Paragua rivers. Bathing the missions of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, it flows and receives the waters of many minor rivers not shown on the map. It has several rapids or shoals which present some impediment to free navigation; but the Dutch navigate it in canoes, launches, and feluccas, and by means of it they carry on their Indian slave trade and trade of another kind with the products of the country. The Government of Esquivo maintains a detachment at a fort called the Castillo viejo, situated at the mouth of this river and of the Masuruni, and a guard thrown out from twenty to twenty-five leagues in the interior of Cuyuni, between which point they have coffee,

sugar, and other plantations, as was seen about the year fifty-eight, and it is to be presumed that they have subsequently advanced and increased their possessions, according to the Indians who frequently travel through those localities. Which impels us to remark, in passing, that as they are also settled on the seacoast of our part of Moruca (Moroco) with a stronghold, detachments of troops, and a small armed war vessel, by little effort they may occupy the most important and fertile portion of the Province, where are situated the missions of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, and have a very easy and short communication further inland, and, there being no obstacle to prevent their entrance and exit whenever they may wish to inspect our possessions, observe our movements, and acquire whatever notices they may please, and should they at any time declare themselves against us, or should those establishments fall into the hands of another more ambitious Power, we would find ourselves with the enemy already within our own house, so that it would not be so easy to dislodge him.

### **The Orinoco River.**

Its importance would justify entering into a very minute detail of a multitude of features, all of which claim attention—its direction, distances, mouths, courses, islets, the greater and smaller rivers flowing into it, etc.; but to avoid the confusion that might result from such a prolixity and minuteness of details, a general idea will here be given, touching broadly some of its principal features, and those of the Apure, Meta, and other rivers tributary to it.

As to the origin or source of the Orinoco there has been a variety of very diverse opinions, of too prolix a nature for discussion here. Father Caulin, in his modern work, relying on observations and more accurate reports, and comparing the notices he was able to secure from the natives themselves, and from others, locates it at one and a half degrees north latitude, and three hundred and seventeen, a little more or less, of longitude, in the neighborhood of a lake, not the Parime or Dorado, as had been thought, but another about sixty leagues west thereof.

From its headwaters it flows more than one hundred and thirty leagues east and west, with many turns and bends, inclining to the north up to the point of its union with the Guaviari and the Atavapo which join it, the latter from the south and the former from the west, having previously received the Casiquiari, or, better said, sending it away from itself as a branch with which it unites and communicates with the Rio Negro, and by means of this with the Amazon.

From the point of its union with the Guaviari and the Atavapo, it flows from south to north, with several bends, nearly a hundred leagues, up to in front of Cabruta, in the Province of Caracas, and of Cayeada therein, in which distance there enter it at either bank many smaller rivers, and some principal rivers, such as the Vichada, Meta, and the Apure, which, through several large branches, empties into it above Cabruta, whence it follows its course to the east, receiving ever new tributaries which join to it their mass of waters from the watersheds of the Provinces of Caracas, Cumana, and Guayana, whereby it goes on enlarging itself more and more until it empties into the northern sea, through a multitude of branches or arms, each one of which of itself is, or appears to be, a large river, having flowed in the last part over a distance of one hundred and thirty leagues, a little more or less.

With intelligent pilots this river affords good navigation up to Faxardo Island, and from there up to the Capital it has some bad reaches, particularly when low, of sand banks, hidden rocks, and shoals; and advancing towards Rio Negro several rapids are met, the principal being those of Carichena, Atures, and Maypures, of bad, and more or less dangerous passage, according to the season of the year, which renders it compulsory to tow vessels from the bank, in which manœuvre the Indians show their skill and practical knowledge, throwing themselves in their canoes and small boats and courting the violence of the current and the danger of the rocks, upon which it seems they are going to strike and be broken into a thousand pieces. It rises and falls once every year; the waters beginning in the month of March to rise slowly, and in the month of August, when they reach their greatest height, they

begin to recede with the same slowness until the month of February, when they reach their lowest stage, there being between this stage and that of the highest water, here in New Guayana, a difference of more than thirteen fathoms. When the river is at its highest its waters inundate a considerable extent of land on the plains of Caracas and Barinas, and they are navigated in launches, boats, and canoes over extensive fields of rice, from which vessels could be loaded with this grain, and the receding of the river leaves on its most spacious savannahs and banks (which in the months of February, March, and April are seen covered with) an immense multitude of turtles, which come out from burying their eggs in the sands, and offer to these residents and natives a most abundant harvest of oil of a fairly good taste and of great utility and little cost. To ascend the river the favorable winds are the east winds or breezes, which reign eight months of the year. From June, inclusive, up to the end of September, which is the time of the highest water, many calms and very rapid currents are experienced. In going up the river one navigates with a fair wind, while to go down one has to tack. When the river is falling the tides are noticeable, although but little at the capital. In Panapana the water rises one foot, in Faxardo two, and so on in proportion as it nears the sea. The tide flows in and out with the same rapidity of current, and when the tide is full it remains almost without movement; but at the instant that it begins to ebb the waters which had furnished the increase promptly leave.

Of the rivers which empty into the Orinoco, those which merit the most attention for the abundance of their waters, for the proportions they offer for a profitable, active, and extensive commerce with the Provinces they bathe, and for the communications which they afford to the farthest interior thereof, are the Meta and the Apure.

### **The Meta**

From its mouth up to the first settlements of the Kingdom of Santa Fe, in Macuco, near the plains of the Colony of Santiago de las Atalayas, is rather deserted, or at the most

inhabited by Guajivo Indians, a nomadic nation, incapable of subjugation, cowardly, and very treacherous. This river is navigable in lighters at all times, and although it has several shoals they are of little danger, as they are of a sandy character, offering little resistance or hardness. During the summer there are continual, very fresh breezes, and in the winter calms and much current; but on the eddies of the shores and the overflows of the savannahs one navigates with less impediment. The people of the Kingdom of Santa Fé are accustomed to sometimes come down the river with cargoes of flour, sugar, cotton cloths, tablecloths, hammocks, blankets, and other products of that country, which they sell in this Province and that of Caracas with considerable profit, and turn the proceeds thereof into cash.

### **The Apure**

Has its source in the Kingdom of Santa Fé, near the city of Nueva Pamplona, in the hills, from which it flows down, bathing the plains of Casanare, and becoming enlarged by the several rivers entering it, that of Santo Domingo, of the Province of Barinas, that of La Portuguesa, which crosses it and furnishes communication for the jurisdiction of Guanare, and others smaller, with which it discharges through various courses into the Orinoco at seven and a half degrees of latitude and eighty leagues, a little more or less, from Guayana. Navigation has for several years been carried on over this river as far as Nutrias, in Barinas, and on its banks the residents of Caracas had the principal herds of live stock of that Province. It produces excellent mules, which are continuously being sent to the other Provinces; it has an abundance of woods of superior quality for building and other purposes, from which the inhabitants take down to Guayana large rafts for boards and beams, and they come down on these, navigating with considerable comfort in their huts or cabins, which serve them as a living place and as a store-house for other products which they are accustomed to bring with them; and although they sell at reasonable prices, they make a fair profit, owing to the slight expense of transportation.

From Guayana to the mouth of the Apure there are many other rivers of less importance ; however, some of them abound in forests and arable lands, which are, on the side of Cumana and Caracas, those known as the Cari, Pao, Manapire, and Guarico, and on the side of Guayana, the Arny, Caura, Cuchivero, with many other smaller streams, on both banks, all of which furnish transportation for products with great ease for the inhabitants established on their banks. Among all of these, that of Caura merits preference, owing to its abundance of woods and its superior arable lands where the Indians cultivate products of prime necessity ; and some small plantations of cotton have been begun by the fugitive *Morenos* from Esquivo, of which the Government is sending several families under charge of the Sergeant commanding that escort ; where, applying themselves to the cultivation of this plant they may be of some service, while at the capital and its environs, their number already considerably increased, they will, on the contrary begin to be prejudicial and cause trouble.

### **Population.**

The present population of this Province resides in eleven settlements, short of Spaniards, divided into four cities and seven towns, both, with the exception of the capital, being such only in name, and seventy-two Indian missions taught by the Franciscan Fathers on the upper and lower Orinoco, from Rio Negro to New Guayana, and by the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers from here down, all making the sum of twenty-four thousand three hundred and ninety-five residents, comprising Spaniards, people of color, and natives of both sexes and of all ages, as is shown by the statement number one hereto annexed.

The missions conducted by the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, comprising thirteen thousand Indians of different nations, situated in the most important, best cared for, and most fertile part of this continent, notwithstanding their antiquity, are still to be classed among the newly subjugated, and with very remote chances of their reaching the state of civilization which is desired, however much the pious Fathers



may exert themselves in bringing to their knowledge (so important to them) a social and Christian life. For not having any individual landed property and contenting themselves with cultivation on a small scale of corn, *casabe*, and some roots for their necessary sustenance, they look upon everything else with repugnance, and as a subjugation from which they flee as well as they can to give themselves up to idleness and to licentiousness, with no little risk to the missionaries themselves who endeavor to restrain them. These missions managed under the economic system which has been followed up to the present, without its being, in all probability, the best adapted system, or one which should not be changed for the greater common benefit and advantage of the Province, are nevertheless the best provided for, and those which are the best conducted.

The Franciscan Fathers, as has just been stated, have under their charge the settlements which are established from the capital to San Carlos of the Rio Negro, they having lately had delivered over to them the settlements which were governed by the expatriated Jesuits, which up to the end of the year eighty-five were without an Apostolic Minister, as also those of the upper Orinoco and Rio Negro, where the natives are more laborious, sow their own fields for their alimentation, take in crops of wild cacao, some resins, fruits, and aromatic spices, which they sell to the Spaniards, with some other lines which indicate their ambition for gain, and how they have advanced through trading and communicating with the troops. The lack of fresh meat in these localities is supplied by fishing and abundance of game to be found in the forests. These forests, according to reports, abound in exquisite woods of different qualities which are not to be found in the rest of the Province; but its transportation is rendered very difficult and expensive, owing to the many rapids and shoals, and the great distance to this capital.

The district of Guirior is daily falling into worse decay, and the number of Spaniards and natives inhabiting it is diminishing. The small detachment of troops guarding this locality experiences a great lack of food supplies, excepting the *casabe*

and bananas, and the latter are not at all abundant; they lack cattle, and to secure at any time salt beef they have to send to Barceloneta—so long and grievous a distance that it arrives, if not spoiled, in a very poor condition. The numerous heathens there are in those forests give at times evidences of desiring to return to their ancient arrogance, coming out every now and then to insult the settlers and Spaniards, with whom they have had, during the past year, eighty-five encounters in which they were repulsed, although with some deaths on both sides.

### **Arable Lands and Products.**

The southern bank of the Orinoco, from Point Barima, twenty leagues more or less up stream, is liable to overflow, up to near the Caruina channel, where the Ymataca ridge of hills takes a direction towards the sea, south-southeast, so that with the channel of the river it forms a spacious triangular peninsula where the Amacuro, Arature, and Aquire rivers flow, fertilizing it. The whole of it is composed of forests and woods of excellent qualities in the way of building lumber and for other uses to which it may be put. It has much arable land, principally on the slopes of the ridge where may be found, free from inundation and retired from the course of the Orinoco, abundant and beautiful valleys, which through several openings lead towards the interior of the country, and there are also to be found some stretches of good pasture for cattle. The rivers named and the branches they shoot out, crossing from one to the other, afford easy communication over the whole extent of this peninsula, and facilities for the transportation of products, whenever there shall be any, to the banks of the Orinoco at very little cost. The distance between these lands to the cattle ranches of the Missions of the Catalan Capuchin Fathers is less than has been supposed up to this time, since the expedition to investigate the building lumber having lacked provisions, the Commissioner thereof sent men by land from the Aquire river to the town of Cumana, who arrived in one day on foot and provided themselves with meat and *casabe*.

From Curucina the ridge of hills runs along the coast of

the Orinoco, leaving between the two a short extent of savannahs for pasturing cattle, and mountains which terminate at the Carony river, and the range follows on to the south, deflecting from here towards the west as far as the capital. It appears like another sphere; a great difference in the temperature, which is much warmer, is noticeable, as well as to the sight the bareness of the land, where over long distances there can only be seen some clumps of *morichales*, but good savannahs for cattle ranges.

Owing to the distance of the arable lands, and the expensive transportation of products, the residents of the capital have advanced little, their cultivation consisting chiefly of food products, which barely suffice for the domestic consumption. Of the productions exportable, there may be harvested annually some six hundred *cargas* of tobacco, and a larger supply of this article could be had if the residents were given more extent for planting. The half or more is gathered in the jurisdiction of the village of Upata, and the rest in the environs of this capital and the other towns of the Province. Eight thousand hides, more or less, are collected—the half of which from the neighboring Provinces. Cacao, the production not sufficient for the interior demand, it becomes necessary to bring it from Caracas and Barinas; but should plantations of this fruit be laid out, there undoubtedly would be produced a very good quality and great abundance, owing to the excellent quality of the lands; and the same may be said with regard to indigo, a few small plantings of which have been begun, which have produced good samples and give assurance of large crops, if there were planters with small holdings who should encourage this branch. Cotton, almost without any cultivation, grows in any place, of fine quality, and each tree produces almost as much again as the trees of the Windward Islands, at the same time the crops being less exposed, owing to the evenness of the seasons of the year; but as the local commerce has given but little thought up to the present to direct trade with Spain, with respect to this commodity, and export to other places has not been afforded it, the planters, who had been previously stimulated and encour-

aged in this important cultivation by the Government, have begun to be discouraged.

The supply of live-stock is estimated to be two hundred and twenty thousand head, more or less, one hundred and eighty thousand in the herds of the communities of the Missions of the Capuchin Fathers, and the remaining forty thousand held by the private residents. The broods of mules are small, as also those of horses; but the presence of pastures and the bands of mares which are brought from the neighboring Provinces can bring about within a few years the increase of each species.

Notwithstanding the number of head of cattle above expressed, it is often indispensable for the supply of this capital to resort to the plains of Caracas and Cumana, because to meet it from the herds of the Missions is expensive and difficult, and those owned by private breeders are limited to cows and yearlings, there being very few beef cattle among them.

### Commerce.

#### *Receipts in the Treasury and Pensions of the Provinces, etc.*

The direct trade between this Province and Spain has made little progress. In former times some vessels came from Cadiz, which returned with a fair profit, loaded with tobacco brought down from Barinas, the surplus of the number of *cargas* which that Province then gave to the Royal Guipuzcoana Company, with that which it secured in this Province with hides, and with some cacao from Caracas; but lately, there remaining to them no other line except that of hides, little abundant, not always profitable, and without any other recourse left them, this trade ceased, and since then only two vessels have arrived—about May, of the year '86, a schooner belonging to a resident, Don Joseph Luis Basanta, with from eighteen to twenty thousand *pesos* in spirits and goods, and in March of the year '89 a brigantine, belonging to Don Manuel Ferran, also a resident, with from ten to twelve thousand *pesos* in a cargo of wines and liquors, the country remaining in the same need as before of the necessities of the common supply, and the encouragement of its agriculture.

The meagerness of the interior trade of the Province is in-

ferred from what has just been said of its products; and that which the residents in their small vessels carry on with the foreign Provinces, by virtue of concessions from the Intendency of Caracas, is limited to the transportation of cargoes of a small number of hides and of cattle and mules, which they buy for the purpose in the neighboring Provinces. Moreover, owing to the mortality of animals and other great losses they suffer in transit, on reaching the said Colonies they find themselves forced, many or the majority of times, to sell at low prices, by reason of the competition from other places, particularly from New England, with the same articles and in a much better condition. If they return with negroes it is necessary to sell them on credit, as there is no purchaser for cash, losing in silver thirty-seven and a half per cent. And lately, when necessity has forced them to bring back a third or a fourth part of the proceeds of their cargo in goods, they have made little or nothing; so that, besides being a manifest deception, this class of trade which deceives people, who once engaged in it find themselves in the necessity of continuing in order to preserve their opinion, exposing themselves to ultimate ruin, which some have already experienced, there being very few who have increased their capital to the point of living unpledged and with moderate comfort and decency, whence spring the undue methods which some follow, and smuggling—petty smuggling, and of little moment, in proportion to their short funds, but ever prejudicial to the Royal interests and the national trade which watches therefor as it should, without overlooking all the ordinary and extraordinary means that reason and the local knowledge of the country may dictate.

The revenues from different contributions coming into the Treasury of Guayana is, one year with another, fourteen thousand *pesos*, and the pensions to which it is subject amount to fifty-six thousand six hundred and eighty-nine *pesos*, as is shown by the statement number 2, hereto annexed, a deficit resulting of forty-three thousand *pesos*, and a necessity of resorting to the Treasury of Caracas, which being taxed with its own obligations can not always render assistance and succor with the punctuality which pressing needs demand.

What has been said up to this point shows the helplessness, the wretchedness, and the backwardness of the Province of Guayana after so long a period of years since its conquest and occupation, and of so many riches, privileges, and franchises with which the Court, appreciating the importance of its preservation, has favored it and worked for its encouragement; wherefore, better results ought to be expected from the merciful Royal liberality, than so poor a return as is here noted. This backwardness is attributed in some way to the unrest and frequent hostilities, in times gone by, of such a multitude and diversity of nations of savage Indians which infested the country; but even more than to this, it seems that it should be attributed to having made an error at the beginning in the selection of the lands for settlements, to which the perplexity of the uncultivated and impenetrable state of a new country contributed not a little, and also the obscurity and uncertainty incident to the circumstances of the first settlements, difficult to overcome, until time shall have gone on disclosing the obstacles which prevented its advancement.

### **Idea of the Settlement Proposed, and Some Means of Realizing the Same.**

In the Royal Instructions of the fifth of June of seventeen hundred and seventy-two it was provided that for the better custody of the Province of Guayana, the interior Provinces, and the Kingdom of Santa Fe, owing to the introductions which the well-known navigation of the Orinoco river affords, the old settlement of Guayana should be moved to Angostura on the same river, where it now is; that the live stock should be taken there and be pastured from there up, and that no new plantings of food products be permitted on the banks of the Orinoco from Angostura down, with the rest therein set forth. By the Royal Instruction of the seventeenth of May of seventeen hundred and sixty-nine, upon representations from this Government, it was ordered to demolish the four towns of Opacoa, Tipurua, Piaeva, and Unata, which were situated below the forts; and the reasons which impelled this sovereign

resolution were that they were unprotected and far distant from the said forts, so that the large *Boca de Navios* being the point from where the enemy could direct any invasion it might attempt, it would, before engaging in any action, come upon the said town, which would afford them assistance, particularly in the way of provisions and guides, to get into the interior of the Province and promptly put them on the road to wherever they wished to go, while on the contrary they would secure these with much labor, delay, and risk, were the towns out of the way. Not disagreeing with the soundness of these reasons at the time that they were considered, and limiting the discussion to them, and to what it seems the different conditions of the present demand, I shall express what I deem to be more advisable for the better service of the King and the advancement of this country.

The northern coast of the Orinoco from the capital to Barrancas de Guaruapo, eight leagues below the castles of old Guayana, is settled with establishments of herds of live stock by the residents of the Province of Cumana, having near them the new subjugations of the Aragonese Capuchin Fathers who, on the same land, according to information, intend to make a settlement of natives. The coast of the south, following from Angostura, or Capital, down stream, is also occupied with cattle ranches and several farms and sown lands to the Caroni river, and from here to the fort are situated the Missions of Carony, San Felix, San Miguel, and Santa Anna de Puga, on fertile lands adapted to agriculture and abounding in building woods, and notwithstanding that pursuant to the Royal provision cited, the four towns of Piaeva, Opacoa, Tipurua, and Unata were demolished and removed, the enemy has not been thereby prevented from providing himself lower down than the castles with the provisions and other assistance he might need, but rather can he find them to-day with more ease on the savannahs covered with cattle of the town of Palmar, twenty-five leagues below old Guayana, near the Ymataca river, where the missionaries themselves in time of war made known their fears of being surprised, their exposed and unprotected position causing no little care to the Government.

They would find them going inland by the Aguire river, in the Missions of Cumana, Miamo, Tupuquen and others which lie more to the east, where, as has been already said, the expeditionary party reconnoitering the forests, which has just finished its work, provided itself with meat and *casabe*, and, finally, they would also find them on the coast of the north, jurisdiction of Cumana, eight leagues or more before reaching the forts, and with the comfort of being able to march on level ground wherever they might desire to carry their operations. It being deduced from the foregoing not only that the end of depriving the enemy of the aid of provisions, guides and other assistance has not been secured ; but rather, through the incidents set forth, it has been afforded the same with increase and in greater abundance, and therefore those causes or considerations which have prevented settlements from the Boca de Navios to the forts of old Guayana having vanished, the system in this part ought to be changed, accommodating itself to the different conditions of the day, and soliciting the remedy by directly contrary action, to proceed without loss of time to the occupation and settlement of those lands, that may be considered the most efficacious and only means for preventing the entrance, not only by way of the Orinoco river but by that of Cuyuni, where the Dutch already introduced, as has been stated in the article treating of this river, and alleging possession as they have by their Ambassador in his representation of the second of August of seventeen hundred and sixty-nine, a copy of which was transmitted to this Government, it is to be feared, unless some obstacle is opposed, that, daily extending more their boundaries, they may take advantage of the first occasion or pretext to go on advancing their establishments and the ideas of their commerce and clandestine trade which are so prejudicial.

From the Orinoco to the Cuyuni, north to south, is thirty leagues, and from east to west, to the Missions of Guayana and the community herds of cattle, much less, so that between these, the low lands of the coast and the mountain lands form a narrow cañon easy to be filled with a proportionate number of profitable settlements, especially by the assistance of the



Reverend Capuchin Fathers, which it is believed, because of their religious zeal and love for the service of the King, they will gladly give, since thereby there will redound to them the advantage of securing the rear of their Missions, and of being able to more tranquilly exercise their Apostolic Ministry, free from the surprises to which they are now exposed; and since all the land lying beyond the Cuyuni up to the sources of the Parime and the Curarieara, now better explored, is found to be much less in extent than was imagined up to the present, it can be hoped on reasonable grounds that within a short number of years it will be advantageously occupied, introducing settlements and ranches—the breeders extending their establishments, the farmers and residents their plantations, and their subjugations the Reverend Missionary Fathers, who, becoming mutually firmer bound together, would carry on their establishments to the great savannahs and banks of the rivers that flow to the south towards the said sources. On the other hand the purpose would be greatly assisted and aided by the fact that the country is largely level and of a generous and healthy temperature, as is proven by the experience of the new subjugations of the Capuchin Fathers, advanced for a reasonable distance, the proximity of whose missions and community herds, affording the supply of bread and meat, would dispel the greatest obstacle to all new establishments.

It seems it would be advisable, for the reasons suggested, to begin the settlements on those lands nearest the boundaries of the foreign possessions, but the indispensable heavy expenses which would be necessary, the difficulty of carrying live-stock, provisions, and other necessities, for such a distance, and that of finding colonists who would wish to at once establish themselves on new lands, and the present lack of communication suggest that the first establishment be located on the banks of the Orinoco, either on the Carucina channel, or on that of Zacaupana, distant twenty leagues, more or less, from the mouths, high land, well ventilated, and most fertile, where at the present time there are congregated more than three thousand Guarauno Indians who would be very serviceable for the purpose, and where settlers would come with less reluctance, owing to the comfort of having provisions nearer,

prompt help in case of necessity, abundant lumber for the construction of their houses, their farms in sight, and easy transportation and an outlet for their products.

### **Port of Register.**

This first settlement in Carucina, or in Zacaupana, as it must be the supporting point for the others, and the place whence the necessary assistance is to go to them, merits the greatest attention, and that from the beginning all possible care should be taken in encouraging and advancing it. Its favorable situation on one of the principal branches of the Orinoco offers many advantages, and, for the greater benefit of commerce, a safe port of register, easy to defend, at a proportionate distance from the principal mouth, or entrance of the river, and without the inconvenience which is now felt of the vessels having to go up eighty or more leagues to this Capital, over many bad places, which make the navigation very difficult and load merchandise and goods with expenses, owing to the great delay, it having been the experience on some occasions to spend more time from the mouths here than from Spain to the mouths. Add to this, that at low water (at least four months in the year) loaded boats can not leave this port, owing to the little depth at the place called Mumo, which compels the cargo being taken on at Carony, where it is necessary to transport it beforehand, there resulting from this practice, aside from the injuries to legitimate trade, the facilities for the clandestine trade, the zeal and vigilance of the principal officials, however hard they strive, being insufficient to prevent it.

This first settlement, once founded for the purposes expressed, three, four, or more towns would be founded towards the interior of that Province, and ultimately a city of Spaniards on the banks of the Cuyuni, at or near the confluence of this river with the Lupano, which would be most beneficial at the said point to assist the subsequent progress of the settlements, to cover this avenue to the missionaries, and prevent the flight of the Indians, their communication with the Dutch of Esquivo, and the entry of the latter, or their traffic and injurious trade of Poytos.

### Colonists.

Practical experience in some new settlements in these countries has shown that the method of bringing families at every expense from Europe, or compulsorily from the neighboring Provinces, does not always produce the best results; but rather, on the contrary, such colonies have been seen to vanish in a very short time after their establishment and to have caused the Royal Treasury considerable fruitless expenses. Wherefore it would be desirable for the new settlers to come voluntarily, attracted by the conveniences of settlement more advantageous than the one they have left, and by the privileges and prerogatives which should be offered them. The greater part of those coming under such terms happen to be poor people, who have no capital whatever with which to cultivate fields to any extent, being limited solely to such as by their own work they can cultivate to eke out a scanty existence. To stimulate and attract these it would be advisable to furnish them at the expense of the Royal Treasury with enough to maintain themselves during the four or six months after their arrival, a time within which they may build their houses and plant their fields of *casabe*, corn, bananas, and other necessities. With this kind of settlers there can be no promise of rapid progress nor greater advantages at the beginning; but, placed and settled on lands the fertility of which will assure them a successful outcome and a more than fair reward for their labor, they will become addicted to work; they will mutually stimulate and assist each other, as among neighbors; they will arrange the methods for fishing, hunting, and other means for sustaining themselves without cost, in order to economize and save, and emulation and the ambition for gain will insensibly encourage them to (aside from the food products and those of prime necessity) promote little by little the cultivation of others of more value and as a multitude, although made up of small parts, forms a body, so many small quantities will increase the branches, particularly those of cotton and tobacco, if at the proper time it should be deemed advisable to increase the planting of the latter under the general rules

of administration, or any others that it may seem more advisable to prescribe, since this branch alone is capable of providing the means for undertaking other means of moment, with which to enliven in this Province an active direct commerce with Spain.

Men of means, as a rule, are the last to come to new settlements, as they fly from the disturbance which the change of domicile entails, and only through the enticement of special privileges which shall assure them certain greater advantages is it possible to lead them to such a resolve. If, through such privileges as the Royal mercy may be pleased to offer, a competent number of families of this class could be secured, the progress would be very rapid; since in proportion to the funds of each they would extend their possessions, they would make the lands valuable, and there would be an abundant supply of products which would invigorate the national commerce; the poor people would find warmth by contact with the more comfortably circumstanced, and occupations which would bring them money and advance their respective fields and industries, and the rich for their own interest would be moved to establish cattle ranches, and as for their regular increase it is necessary to have the extent of one, two, or more leagues, the lands would be divided among them in proportion, in which case the occupation of the lands up to the Cuyuni would be indubitable with a small number of regular breeders, and the extension thereof over the plains which lie further on towards the frontier.

Even more necessary than breeders or owners of large herds of cattle are the farmers having many slaves for agriculture, in which the true or principal advancement of a country consists, and with which it will be possible to place it in the state of opulence of which it is susceptible in the neighboring Provinces, and particularly in the Province of Caracas. In the proportion that it is easy to find moderately rich breeders would it be difficult to secure from the others who might wish to change to localities not well known, because besides possessing considerable haciendas and sufficient arable lands, they enjoy a trade which gives them a market for their crops, and

even though some should be so inclined they would be deterred by the thought of the difficulty of finding purchasers at fair prices for the possession they leave; or they would be restrained by the contingencies inseparable from a removal of that character, which, among people of some wealth and property, are considerable.

These objections might be overcome in the same manner as in the Island of Trinidad of the Windward, if perhaps greater objections should not result by allowing the entrance of families from the foreign colonies, upon which point, therefore, further explanations are withheld, leaving it to the superior wise judgment of him who can and should deliberate in a matter of such importance; and it is proposed for the present that in order to give a beginning to the occupation of the lands, some families of the Province itself be taken hold of to the extent that its small population may permit, and also of those that may desire voluntarily to go from the Provinces of Cumana, Caracas, and Barinas (and some will not fail to present themselves), as in the localities they abandon their loss will not be much felt, and in the latter they may in time be of much benefit. If at the capital it should be left to the judgment of the residents, there is no doubt that many, or the greater part of the former emigrants, would gladly embrace the chance to go and establish themselves from the Presidio down, owing to the experience and knowledge they have of the fertility of those lands, of the abundance of fish, game, and other conveniences, of which they still retain a fresh and a very tender memory. But after admitting those it may be advisable to admit, the rest should be restrained, because at no time should the capital be allowed to retrograde, but, on the contrary, its greater advancement should be secured, since besides the value it to-day has, it is, owing to its situation and to the ease of its communication with the neighboring Provinces, an important post.

The Reverend Catalanian Capuchin Fathers in the year seventy-seven, as the effect of their zeal and love for the service of the King, made an offer of twelve thousand head of cattle, which Y. M. was pleased to accept and to order to be distributed among the poor inhabitants to increase the breed,

which, through several casualties, did not give the results at the time, nor afterwards, and it is referred to on this occasion as a judgment favorable to the matter in hand, and which at no time could have had better application than now, for with this help and some fair encouragement some poor families would be stimulated to establish themselves in the new settlements, to whom so soon as they should have a house built, there would be distributed among them, pro rata, in proportion to their number, from twenty-five to thirty or more cows, with their corresponding bulls, to each family, upon the condition that they could not kill, sell, nor dispose of them until the expiration of at least three years, so that by this means, besides finding themselves afterwards with a fair profit, there would be obtained by the increase in a short number of years the extension of the possessions, and a larger occupation of the territory.

This secured in the manner proposed from Carucina inland, and the last Spanish town founded in the locality designated, there would result a barrier of no little safety against the hostile incursions and prejudicial trade of the Dutch ; the country would be rendered traversible by open roads for the mutual communication of the farmers with the breeders, and between the towns, and the explorations that it might be desired and convenient to make of the great savannahs to the south thereof would be rendered practicable, and in this same direction could be reached the localities of the establishment or independent Republic of the fugitive negroes from Esquivo and Surinam, and since the latter endeavor to maintain their liberty, it might be agreeable to them that we offer to preserve the same under certain conditions which might redound to the profit and greater increase of the population ; but with the precautions and distrust which it is ever incumbent to exercise with such castes and kinds of people. And finally there would be obtained the subjugation of so many nations of Indians inhabiting that extensive center, who, seeing themselves shut in on all sides, would be willing to treat, which can not possibly be secured in any other way in a long time and with very great expense.

The notices of the progress of the new settlements would

probably stimulate many families from the Districts of Caracas, Cumana, and Barinas to come and establish themselves on the lands from Presidio down, or on those of the Capital, where they will apply themselves to agriculture or the breeding of cattle, to which the greater part of these people generally take, who, in the same manner as the first settlers, will have distributed among them building lots and lands, by which means the Spanish residents would be increased, and by their touch and example the natives would become civilized, and the latter would be led to live in the towns of the former, and *vice versa*, without the missionaries being able to prevent the same, particularly in those to be founded anew; as experience has shown, at least in these parts of America, that the Indians, while they are kept separate from the common and general contact, never entirely get away from the ideas of their ancient superstitions, but rather remain, with very little difference, as rude and little rational as when they emerged from their forests, although not without sagacity and considerable astuteness for evil.

### **Trade by the Meta and the Apure.**

The advantages offered to the Orinoco by the Meta and Apure rivers are seen with regret to be frustrated, owing to the failure of affording regular communication to their inhabitants with the capital of Guayana—a communication which, at other times, not very remote, while it was in existence, alone rendered unto the Royal Treasury more than at the present time is rendered by all the branches together, and it gave to the population a very considerable increase, as is evidenced by the village of Caycara, and other villages, which owe their fairly good increment to that short time of privilege, and brought to the capital many of its residents, who came down from Barinas and other points to establish themselves, and when this trade ceased their presence ended, and several even left, having lost hope of the advance they desired, and notwithstanding that by the Royal Rescript creating the district of Barinas, its commerce by Apure is expressly joined to that of this Province, up to the present, notwithstanding that some

time has passed, it has advanced little beyond the state in which it formerly was. This without doubt must be due to the want of funds from the Registers of Guayana, for the returns; for without these, the inhabitants of both Provinces can not secure advantages; for this reason those of the former Province find themselves in the painful case of losing some products that they might take advantage of with profit were the commerce between Spain and Guayana in operation.

The same or greater injuries are borne by the trade of the Meta river, owing to the distance that those inhabitants are from the Presidio of the Kingdom of Santa Fé and of its capital, since, owing to the expensive transportation by land, they do not endeavor to advance their agriculture all that they might when, without dispute, the wealth of that soil could produce large crops of wheat, indigo, cotton, wool, hides, cordovan, sugar, etc., with which to profitably enlarge this trade and the direct commerce with Spain by way of the Orinoco, who, owing to the want of this communication, are without any outlet other than that which they employ in their manufactures of cotton cloths, quilts, and other ordinary fabrics for domestic consumption, of which they bring down daily small quantities, and some flour and sugar, to this Province, taking back their proceeds in cash, as they are not permitted to convert it into anything else, to the serious prejudice of this country through the extraction of its small money supply, and of the people of the Kingdom who find it impossible to provide themselves with tools, and other implements necessary for agriculture, which are very scarce amongst them; and this retards the cultivation of their fields. And they will suffer these deficiencies until there shall be established a reciprocal trade between the Orinoco and the districts of Meta and Casanare, Macuco and Santiago de las Atalayas, and until those inhabitants are permitted to export their products and take back the proceeds thereof in the articles mentioned and in other lines fitted for the use and consumption of the country.

These districts once incorporated with the trade at Guayana, it would not be difficult, even in the present state, to dispatch to Spain two or three vessels a year with the cacao, hides, cot-



ton, and other products which might be collected in those lands, and in the lands of this Province. The communication of Santa Fé by Cartagena might suffer some diminution, by the dismemberment of some Districts which contribute to it with their industry; but conceding the importance of the Province of Guayana, through its situation, and other conditions which recommend it, and bearing in mind its present miserable condition and the necessity to encourage it, it seems that there is no consideration over which there should not preponderate that of placing it in a most respectable condition for defence, which can only be secured by increasing its population and agriculture, extending its trade, stimulating in its inhabitants application and industry, through the privileges that it may be desired to dispense to them, and conceding to the emigrants and new colonists, besides the gratuitous distribution of building lots and arable lands and cattle, exemption from import duties on slaves, tools, and agricultural implements, and those necessary for the use of laborers and *peons* for the term of ten years, and to this end the exportation to foreign colonies of mules, cattle, and the first fruits of their farms for a stated time, and under a moderate single tax which the Royal mercy may be pleased to impose thereon.

Guayana, July tenth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

MIGUEL MARMIÓN—[his sign manual].

---

There is annexed a statement of the receipts from various taxes, coming into this Royal Treasury in a year, and of the pensions it has to satisfy.

---

The foregoing are copies agreeing with the originals existing in these General Archives of the Indias. (Case 131. Shelf 2. Bundle 19.) Seville, February 20, 1891.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,

Chief Librarian.

[SEAL.]

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias.

Madrid, February 5, 1891.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XIX.**

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF SIMANCAE.

War Department.—XVIII Century.—Bundle 7,237.

---

**Letter from Don Luis Antonio Gil to the Most Excellent  
Count del Campo de Alange, dated in Guayana, October  
16, 1790.**

---

*Endorsement.*—The Governor and General Commanding the Province of Guayana gives to Y. E. a brief sketch of the decadent state thereof and of the advances in its territory of the Dutch, French, and Portuguese; and of the fugitive negroes of Esquivo, Demerara, Berbis, Surinam, and Cayenne; and the free and independent Republic they have established.

---

**MOST EXCELLENT SIR:** On the 22d of September last I assumed the command in this Province, whose local conditions and circumstances make it one of those most meriting the attention and benign compassion of Y. M.; and that, pitying the miserable state to which it is reduced, your Royal clemency may be pleased to extend to it those favors which may suffice to cause it to flourish, so that the residents, emerging from their poverty, may render unto the Royal Exchequer the treasures which are being offered by the multitude of arable lands (almost deserted), building lumber, and other productions with which nature has enriched this vast continent, which, according to the most accurate maps, has as its boundaries the Orinoco on the north, the Amazon and Negro rivers on the south, the seacoast on the east, and the Provinces of Cumana, Caracas, Barinas, and the Kingdom of Santa Fé on the west, with the misfortune that the number of inhabitants barely reaches 25,000 souls, and of these three-fourths are na-

tives still in the category of new subjects. Agriculture is very meagre, and many more of the products are exportable to Europe, and the direct commerce (for this reason) not obtaining any increase, as Y. E. will be well assured in time, upon more solid grounds than I have been able to obtain in the short time that I have been in this colony, whose considerations have claimed my first attention; and now, more than by these, my care has been enlisted on seeing that the Dutch, French, and Portuguese are endeavoring to occupy the greater part of this vast extent of our territory, and that from day to day they are advancing their possessions; the Dutch particularly by way of the Esquibo river, which offers them free passage, by the Cuyuni river, to the Missions of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, and further into the interior of the Province, as there is no guard or any settlement of Spaniards to impede them; and the Portuguese by the Negro river, the Amazon, and the Parime; that species of free and independent Republic of fugitive negroes, which within a few years may become terrible, being situated at the meeting point of the boundary lines of these possessions and the sources of their respective rivers.

In the sea, Y. E. knows better than I, that at a short distance, and to the northeast of the *Boca de Navios* of the Orinoco, is situated the Island of Barbadoes, belonging to the English, and running to the northwest, a little more or less, the rest of the Antilles. The excellencies of this mighty river are known, and no one is to-day ignorant of the easy communication that its navigation offers to the Kingdom of Santa Fé and the other Provinces named above, circumstances which bring out the importance of this Province, and counsel the necessity of furnishing the means for its encouragement and defence, for it may be that they will be an incentive to the covetous rivalry of other Powers. Wherefore it has appeared to me to be my duty to present this short sketch for the time being, and to bring it to the notice of Y. E., assured of your love and zeal for the Royal Service, and that being so addicted to the advantages and progress of the State, you will contribute with your powerful influence to the end that this poor Province may ob-

tain the means for its invigoration by the increment of agriculture and trade, the only branches which will furnish its settlement and defence, which present circumstances so greatly demand. And it appearing to me well to bring it to the notice of the most excellent the Ministers of State, Grace and Justice, of War, and of the Treasury, I execute it also for them on this date.

God preserve Y. E. many years.

Guayana, October 16, 1790.

LUIS ANTONIO GIL—[a flourish].

The Most Excellent Count del Campo de Alange.

---

This document agrees in all its parts with the original.

FRANCISCO DIAZ, Chief.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Chief of the Archives, Francisco Diaz.

Madrid, December 30, 1890.

P. FOURTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XX.**

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIAS.—(SEVILLE.)

Case 131.—Shelf 2.—Bundle 17.

---

1794.

---

**Letters from His Majesty's Minister in The Hague to Don Antonio Valdes and the Duke de la Alcudia, regarding the refunding to the Dutch Company of the sum of 957 florins and 14 sueldos, which they spent on the crew of the Spanish vessel "Nuestra Senora de la Concepcion" during its stay at Surinam, etc.**

---

Most Excellent Sir:

MY DEAR SIR: Day before yesterday I received a letter from Monsieur de Six, Secretary of the Dutch West Indies Company, in which he enclosed a minute of what happened with Captain José Sariol, his Mate, Manuel Col, and eight sailors of the crew of the Spanish merchant vessel "Nuestra Señora de la Concepción," which having set sail from Carthagena on the twelfth of January, seventeen hundred and ninety-three, bound for the said Indias, had been seized on the twenty-third of March, one hundred miles east of Cape San Vicente, by the French corvette "La Blonde" and conducted on the thirteenth of April to Cayenne, which men, after three months of detention, succeeded in escaping in a canoe, in which they reached Surinam on the fourteenth of July. That the Governor General of that Colony, having treated them with the greatest humanity and generosity up to the twenty-fourth of the said month, caused them on this day to go on board the ship "Esnó la Gloria," Captain J. Schaepfler, who, on his return from Demerara, on the twenty-third of August, brought the certificate of having carried and set on shore the said Captain, mate,

and sailors at port Moroco, west of the Esequibo river. With this minute he sends me two accounts: The first, of the expenses occasioned by the said Spaniards during their stay in Surinam, which amounts to three hundred and fifty-seven florins and fourteen *sueldos*, and the second, for their transportation, which comes to six hundred florins, both of which amounts make up the sum of nine hundred and fifty-seven florins and fourteen *sueldos*; requesting me to lend my good offices to the end that the proprietor company of this Colony be refunded expenses occasioned by so just a cause. His letter is conceived in the most courteous terms, expressing the satisfaction the Company has felt that the Commandant of Surinam should have paid the due attention to the vassals of the King our Master, as the Governors of His Majesty have done on similar occasions with those of the Republic, and desiring that this union and good harmony among the respective Colonies shall be cultivated and increased daily more and more with reciprocal advantages. I have replied to him with the same attention, and offered to lay the whole matter before His Majesty, whom I did not doubt would express his satisfaction at this good feeling, and to report the results. I do not enclose to your Excellency the documents corroborating the said statement in due form, in order not to make the package bulky, and because I think that they should remain in these archives in the original, where your Excellency may have them whenever deemed convenient. I trust that your Excellency will be pleased to communicate to me the resolution of His Majesty on this point and issue the orders for the refunding of these expenses, should His Majesty judge it necessary.

In this connection I place myself at the disposal of your Excellency with the greatest earnestness, and I pray Our Father to preserve the life of your Excellency for many years.

The Hague, June the tenth of seventeen hundred and ninety-four.—The Most Excellent, the Duke de la Alcudia.—July fourth.—Advise Navy Department, and reply expressing grateful acknowledgements.—Done as per minute on July ninth to Navy Department, and on the twenty-eight to the Treasury.

MADRID, *July ninth, Ninety-four.*

To Don Ygnacio de Corral, The Hague :

Four mails have arrived from England, and in them I have received several letters from your Honor, of the contents of which I have apprised the King.

In view of what your Honor says in one of them, dated the tenth of June, regarding the good offices which the crew of the Spanish merchant vessel owed to the Dutch Governor General during their stay in Surinam, His Majesty has resolved that notice of all this be given to the Ministry of the Navy, which I do on this date, in order that it may order the refunding to the Dutch Company of the nine hundred and fifty-seven florins and fourteen *sueldos*, which it spent in the aid given to said crew, and that your Honor express to the said Company the satisfaction of His Majesty at so generous an action, and the desire he has to daily increase, by reciprocal advantages, the union and good harmony existing between the respective colonies. Which I make known to your Honor by Royal command, in reply to your said letter, and I pray God, etc.

---

MADRID, *July ninth, Ninety-four.*

To Señor Don Antonio Valdes :

MOST EXCELLENT SIR: The Minister Plenipotentiary of His Majesty at The Hague writes under date of June the tenth that M. de Six, Secretary of the Dutch West Indies Company, sent him an authentic statement in which is recorded the good reception that the captain, mate, and crew of the Spanish merchant vessel "Nuestra Señora de la Concepción," bound from Carthagena and seized by the French, having escaped and reached Surinam, received from the Governor General of that Dutch Colony, who caused them to be placed on Spanish territory, and he sends at the same time the bills for this transportation and for the maintenance of the said crew in Surinam, which together amount to nine hundred and fifty-seven florins and fourteen *sueldos*, the refunding of which the proprietor Company of the said Colony requests.



The King, apprised of all this, has been pleased to resolve that there be expressed to the Company, through his Minister Plenipotentiary, the satisfaction he has felt because of the good offices rendered in Surinam to the said crew, and that the Company be refunded the said amount, and by Royal command I inform Y. E. for your intelligence, and to the end that the said refunding be effected by your instructions.

God preserve your Excellency many years.

Palace, July ninth, seventeen hundred and ninety-four.

Señor Don Antonio Valdez.

---

MOST EXCELLENT SIR: I reply to what your Excellency says to me by Royal Command in the official communication of the ninth instant regarding the refunding to the Dutch West Indies Company of the nine hundred and fifty-seven florins and fourteen *suelos*, which sum represents the aid rendered by the Governor General of Surinam to the Captain, Mate, and crew of the Spanish merchant vessel named "Nuestra Señora de la Concepción," and the transportation of the said individuals to our territory, by saying to your Excellency that the said reimbursement should be arranged by the Ministry of the Treasury, under which, and not under the Ministry of my charge, come merchant vessels.

God preserve your Excellency many years.

Palace, July eleventh, seventeen hundred and ninety-four.

ANTONIO VALDEZ.

To the Duke de la Alcudia.

July twelfth.—Send to the Treasury.—Done as per the minute which served for the Ministry of the Navy on the twenty-eighth instant.

---

Most Excellent Sir.

MY DEAR SIR: Through the esteemed communication of your Excellency of the ninth of July last, I am apprised of the resolution of His Majesty, transmitted to the Department of the Navy under the same date, to the end that it order the refunding to the Dutch Company of the nine hundred and fifty-

seven florins and fourteen *sueldos* it spent in the aid given to the crew of the Spanish merchant vessel, "Nuestra Señora de la Concepción," by the Governor General of Surinam during their stay in that city.

In compliance with the Royal command that your Excellency is pleased to communicate to me therein, I shall express to the said Company the satisfaction experienced by His Majesty for so generous an action, and the desires he has to daily increase, through reciprocal advantages, the union and good harmony existing between the respective Colonies.

I place myself at the disposal of your Excellency in whatever way you may be pleased to command me, and I pray our Father to preserve the life of your Excellency for many years.

The Hague, August fifth, seventeen hundred and ninety-four.

Most Excellent Sir, I kiss the hand of your Excellency ; your most favored and humble servant.

DON YGNACIO MA. DE CORRAL Y AGUIRRE.

To the Most Excellent Duke de la Alcudia.

---

Most Excellent Sir.

MY DEAR SIR: Being informed by the bankers of the Court in Amsterdam, under date of the fifteenth instant, that they had received orders to deliver to me nine hundred and fifty-seven florins and fourteen *sueldos*, to be turned over to the West Indies Company as a refund of an equal sum which the Governor General of the Colony of Surinam had expended for the Captain and crew of the Spanish merchant vessel, "Nuestra Señora de la Concepción," who had taken refuge in that port, I have immediately delivered the sum in a letter of exchange to Mr. William Six, Secretary of the said Company, with a letter couched in the terms that His Majesty was pleased to command me. He has replied to me in like terms under date of the nineteenth of this month, adding that he had received the said sum, of which I apprise your Excellency in the discharge of this commission, with which it is brought to a close.

I repeat myself, as ever, at the disposal of your Excellency for whatever you may desire, and I pray our Father to preserve the life of your Excellency many years.

The Hague, September the twenty-third, seventeen hundred and ninety-four.

Most Excellent Sir, Your most favored and humble servant kisses the hand of your Excellency.

DON YGNACIO MA. DE CORRAL Y AGUIRRE.

To the Most Excellent the Duke de la Alcudia.

---

The foregoing are copies agreeing with the original documents in these General Archives of the Indias, in Case 131, Shelf 2, Bundle 17. Seville, January 7th, 1891.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,  
Chief Librarian.

[SEAL.]

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias. Madrid, January 2, 1891.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XXI.**

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIAS.—(SEVILLE.)

State Papers.—CARACAS.

---

1790.

---

**Copy of a letter from Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, Commander of the Escort of the Catalonian Capuchins of Guayana, to Don Miguel Marmion, reporting the result of the commission with which he entrusted him, being the reconnaissance of the Coyuni, and proposing the establishing of a Settlement at the mouth of the Curumo River.**

---

PUERTO DE CURA, *May 28, 1790.*

---

1790.—[Copy.]

Having, by order of your Honor, assumed command of this Escort to the Reverend Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, my residence being in the town nearest the Coyuni River, by Yuruari, in compliance with the orders of your Honor; having examined, with due attention, the localities nearest to the Coyuni and best adapted to restrain and repair the damages caused to these Missions by the intercourse of the Caribs, settled and unsettled, by the said Coyuni river which empties into the Esquibo, and with the Dutch on this river, I am constrained to make known to your Honor that in order to secure the rear and the boundary of these Missions with the Dutch, it would be very expedient to cut off the communication of the said Caribs, by placing a detachment at the mouth of the Curumo river, which is the last and largest emptying into

the Coyuni in these parts, and affording the least navigation ; by which means the said pass would be closed, and the Indians of these towns (besides those who desert), some with mischievous pretexts, others with the pretext of seeking relatives, be prevented from coming down laden with hammocks and other things by the said Coyuni to the Dutch of the Masurini and Esquivo. To do this it is necessary at first that from the town of Tumeremo, four short leagues distant from Curumo, Indians shall go with the necessary tools and fell some trees that form several bad passes on each side of the river, principally in summer, and where two or more canoes should be constructed for the transit to the said mouth of the Curumo, and whereby the several rapids of the Yuruari and Coyuni up to the Curumo, will be avoided, as is shown by the trip made to the mouth of the said Coyuni.

There can also be established at the said mouth of the Curumo a settlement of Guaica Indians, who live in the southern part of the Coyuni, whence they are now being taken out for Cura and Topuquen, not counting such as have left for other settlements, it being very pertinent in this regard that from the town of Cura there should go to the Curumo two or more families of Guaicas to make sure of those newly settled, laying out farms a year in advance to prevent the needs they would experience by having to transport the supplies from Tumeremo for the space of a year or more for the detachment and those who may settle at the said mouth ; and considering that there is no lack of an adequate site for the port for Tumeremo on the Curumo, it would be very advisable that the said port should be settled, since on both sides of the Curumo there are savannahs and arable lands sufficient for the establishment of a town, and since this part merits the greatest attention, provided the detachment is stationed at the mouth of the Curumo.

The stronghold or sentry-box should be established between the mouth of the Curumo and the Guotupique channel, the most available site as well to take the avenues of the two rivers Coyuni and Curumo, as to open up a road to Tumeremo, should it be advisable at any time.

I enclose for your Honor a statement of the implements necessary for the establishment of the said stronghold or sentry-box, besides what I have reported to your Honor, finding it more advisable to have it at Curumo than at any other point of this river mouth.

I should not omit (although not very reliable) the information I have received from those Indians who arrived from the town of Guacipati not many days since, who say that the Dutch, as a result of explorations made of the Cuyuni up to the first settlement of the mouth, have thrown out an advance guard at the place Onore-rama, five or six leagues up from the mouth of the Cuyuni, which I impart to your Honor for whatever purposes it may serve.

I also inform your Honor that during these days of my establishment in Puerto de Cura the Indian Cuayari went down to Esquibo under the pretext of some fugitive Indians from the town of Topuquen, who reached the port where I am now; but, having received advance notice, he landed, hiding the liquor and other things he carried, asserting and saying only on his arrival that he had not found the fugitives; wherefore I again say to your Honor that only from the mouth of the Curumo can these trips to Esquibo be prevented, for although they do not exactly send them to Esquibo, they tolerate them, and consent to their going and coming, since they are not ignorant of the heavy drinking (*bevezones*) of the Indians on reaching the said Esquibo.

God our Father preserve your Honor many years.

Port of Cura, May 28, 1790.

ANTONIO LOPEZ DE LA PUENTE.

Señor Don Miguel Marmión.

---

*Statement of what is most necessary for the establishment of a stronghold or sentry-box, twelve yards square, at the mouth of the Curumo, which empties into the Cuyuni :*

*Primarily.*—A corporal and eight men, under the orders and direction of the Commander of this Escort, for the purposes

that may be necessary in view of what may happen at the beginning of the said settlement with the Dutch or Indians in this neighborhood.

Four swivel-guns on their stocks, and ten powder cartridges, with ten sacks of balls for each gun. Twenty-five axes, twenty *machetes*, twelve *chicoras*, and twelve *caporanos* for timber cutting, and clearing, etc.

Two canoes of twelve *varas* or more for transporting supplies, or whatever may be needed during the said establishment.

Twenty Carib Indians of the town of Topuquen, Guasipati, and Carapo. Meat and *casabe*, which the town of Tumeremo should furnish.

Puerto de Cura, May 28, 1790.

ANTONIO LOPEZ DE LA PUENTE.

---

A copy from the original.

Guayana, June 4, 1790.

MIGUEL MARMIÓN—[there is a flourish].

---

It is a copy agreeing with the original document in the General Archives of the Indias, in the collection of State papers. *Audiencia* of Caracas. Seville, December 29, 1890.

[SEAL.]

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,  
Chief Librarian.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias.

Madrid, January 13, 1891.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XXII.**

56—6—21—GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIAS.—(SEVILLE.)

---

**1743.**

---

**Copies of and extracts from several edicts taken from various records of the visit made to the Province of Guayana by its Governor, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, which were transmitted in several parts with a letter from the latter, dated September 30, 1743.**

(This bundle corresponds to document No. 1.)

---

*Copies and extracts from several edicts taken from various records of the visit made to the Province of Guayana by the Governor, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, which were transmitted in several parts in a letter from the latter, dated September 30, 1743.*

---

**Part 1.**

*Page 1.*—In the city of Cumana, on the fifteenth day of the month of January, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, the Brigadier of the Royal Armies, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Governor and Captain-General of these Provinces of Nueva Andalucia, Nueva Barcelona, Guayana, their coasts and Presidios on the mainland, for the King, our Master, said: That whereas he was about to leave on the visit to the Colony and attached Province of Guayana in the execution of his duty and the commands of H. M., and it



becoming necessary, owing to his absence, to issue the proper orders, so that there shall be no cessation of the political government, the military, the conduct of the Royal Treasury, and everything else incident to the Royal service, and that justice may follow its regular course for the benefit of parties, and the common advantage of these Provinces, he should order and he ordered that all the dependencies and causes, civil as well as criminal, depending, &c. (Here follows the substitution of command during his absence, designating the persons to act in his stead.)

On page 4, reverse, it says: Edict relating to the visit to Guayana. "In the city of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, on the 8th day of the month of February of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, Señor Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Brigadier of the Armies of H. M., Governor and Captain General of the Provinces of Nueva Andalucia, Nueva Barcelona, Guayana, their coasts and Presidios, for the King our Master, said: That whereas, on this date his Honor has arrived at this city of Cumana to make the visit thereto, its Royal fortress, and new conversions of Indians, in compliance with his duty, and in execution of the Royal Decrees, one dated in Pardo on January ninth, of seventeen hundred and forty, and the other in Aranjuez, on June ninth, of the same year, of which, and the other provisions that may seem advisable for the attestation of the orders and records of this visit, a bundle and second document be made up, therefore he should command and commanded that a review be held of the infantry company [paid from the allowance] which garrisons the Castle of San Francisco de Asis, and the new conversions of the Reverend Capuchin Fathers and Jesuits of the upper Orinoco. That the Captain commanding furnish a report as to the arms, military stores, munitions and articles existing in the arsenals for the reserve supply, and the sergeant of the artillery as to the cannons and swivel-guns with their carriages, mounted or unmounted, giving their caliber, and advices of the ready stores with which they are supplied, excluding the reserve supplies, which reports they shall frame with," &c.

(Here follow the review of the military, their supplies, the examination of officers, the armament of the Presidios of San Francisco de Asis of Guayana, and of the *Padrastro*, reconnaissance of the Limones channel, measurement of the artillery range, &c.)

---

On page 34, reverse, is found the visit to the settlements of the Suay Indians, which reads thus:

"In the settlement of La Purisima Concepción de Suay, on the seventeenth day of the month of February of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, his Honor, the said Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, said: That whereas in the prosecution of his visit he has arrived at this settlement, where he must investigate how the Indians are managed and governed, and whether they are aggrieved by some persons in power, military officers or ministers of justice, giving the Indians to understand the Royal recommendations to which they are entitled by the Royal laws, in order that justice may be administered to them; that they may be supported, defended, and receive satisfaction in cash indemnity for the grievances they may have suffered, and justice above all, without any delay, to which end this visit is made; and that his Honor is ready to hear and protect them, and the form and policy under which they are to live, and the advisability thereof for their preservation. Their application to the tilling of the fields, for the increase of provisions in their settlements, so advantageous to their progress, and manufactures, which are commonly of hammocks; and fishing, in which they may engage for their profit; the obligation they have to attend church and learn the Christian doctrine, and be present at the holy sacrifice of mass, and aid in the repair and building of the material church of the settlement, the mission house, and that which it is customary to construct in all Indian settlements under the name of Royal house, for the care of travellers; that each family shall live in a separate house; that they shall have a community farm of the most useful products for the common

needs, and that these products, owing to the little capacity of the Indians, be distributed and sold with intervention of the Missionary of the settlements for the benefit of the Indians, since there are no councilmen in these settlements, as they are new subjugations.

“By reason of all of which his Honor ordered and orders that the drum be beat, and that the Indians—men, women, and children—once met together in the plaza thereof, have this edict read and explained to them through interpreters, to which position he appoints Adjutant Pedro de Los and Juan Antonio Bonarde, who are present, as they are versed in the language of the Indians of this Province, who are to be notified for their acceptance and that they may take the oath, and be instructed to follow his Honor throughout this visit, for the same proceeding is to be had in the other Indian settlements thereof. And as the latter are under the charge of the Reverend Capuchin Fathers of the Province of Catalonia, appointed by H. M. for the conversion of the Indians of this Province, his Honor prays and charges the Very Reverend Father Prefect of the said sect to accompany him, and that he also be pleased to order the Teacher of this settlement, as well as of the others, to exhibit the rolls of the Indians of both sexes of these settlements, pursuant to which they will be reviewed at once, and that they be filed, and that he furnish a report of the number of houses composing it; whether its site and waters are healthy and its lands fertile; what products are cultivated there and the greatest yield that can be produced, and a list of the jewels and ornaments of the churches, for a better knowledge of everything,” &c.

(Here follow the returns and the presentation of the lists of enrolled Indians of the Mission of La Purísima Concepción de Nuestra Señora de Suay and of Santa María de los Angeles de Amacuro, Province of Guayana; the list and rolls of the Indians of the Mission San Antonio de Caroni; the visit to said settlement; the rolls of the Indians of Alta Gracia, of the Mission of the Capuchin Fathers of Orinoco, from the Province of Catalonia. Rolls of the Mission of Cupapuy. Same of the Mission of La Divina Pastora del Yacuri).

On page 67 is found the edict for the settling of the Panacayo Indians, granting them a site, appointing a Captain for them, and reading thus :

“ In the town of La Divina Pastora de Yacuri, on the twenty-second day of the month of February, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, Señor Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Brigadier of the armies of H. M., and Governor and Captain General of these Provinces of Nueva Andalucia, Nueva Barcelona, and those of Guayana, its coasts and Presidios, for the King our Master, said : That whereas before His Honor had appeared Don Juan Guayurumay, chief of the Panacuyo nation, with two other chiefs of the same nation, showing a dollar piece (of those of eight *reales* silver), suspended on a cord, which the said Guayurumay carried as a medal, evincing consideration and esteem for the Royal arms of the King our Master stamped thereon, and expressing in his language (as interpreted by Joseph, the Indian Captain of the town of San Joseph de Cupapay), his wish to settle at the place Cunury, ten leagues, more or less, distant herefrom, subject to the teachings of the Capuchin Missionaries of the Province of Catalonia, who are evangelizing in this Province of Guayana, and as vassals of H. M.; and that for the purpose he has, as a beginning, thirty-three men of arms, married by contract, according to their custom, thirty-eight women, twenty-three boys, and sixteen girls, all friendly and obedient to him, requesting that he be received under the Royal protection and vassalage, and be granted the site of Cunury for settlement. And having conferred upon the subject with the Reverend Father Prefect of the said Capuchins, Friar Augustin de Olot, the latter informed His Honor that, notwithstanding that this nation was very warlike against other Indian nations, for some time past it has been in communication with the settlements and the Fathers of Missions of the center of this land, with whom it has maintained peaceful friendship, and shown loyalty to the Spaniards even when all others became restless and rose up against the pious Missionaries, endeavoring to expel them from this land as a result of the invasion of the English enemy in Guayana and Victoria, which it gained from the Spanish arms ;

and that it would be of great advantage to them in the other conversions of the Guayana Indians, for, should the settlement of the said Panacuyos be effected at the place they desire, to which end he would gladly co-operate with his community, it would serve as a protecting wall against the Carib Indians, who are the most rebellious nation, constantly waging war against the settlers, and which are beyond hope of conversion. In virtue of which his Honor has met and treated him amicably, presenting the said chief and his companions with some gifts expressive of his esteem in order to persuade them, and bring them to the flock of the Church. Wherefore, the more to enthuse them with the said settlement, he resolved and ordered that there issue the appointment of Founding Captain of the said settlement of Cunury to said Don Juan Guayurumay, and that it be delivered to him sealed, signed and countersigned in due form, making known to him the contents thereof and the authority conferred upon him over the other Indians of his nation, in order that he may bring them to Christian settlement and policy; and he hereby so ordered and signed, to which I hereby certify.

“DON GREGORIO ESPINOSA.

“Before me—

“DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
“Royal and Public Notary.”

NOTE.—On the said day, month, and year there was issued and delivered the appointment of Founding Captain to the said Don Juan Guayurumay, and its contents were made known to him, as ordered, who received it with joyous features, expressing his esteem therefor, to which I certify.

ALCALA, *Notary.*

Here follows the roll of the Indians of this Mission of Santa Barbara de Guayarayma, Province of Guayana, and on page 73, reverse, is found the visit to the town of Payaraima, and on page 78 appears the edict for the recognition of the status of the new founding of the city of Guayana, which is as follows:

“In this said Presidio of Santa Thomé de la Guayana, on

the said twenty-fifth day of the month of February, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, his Honor, the said Governor and Captain General said: That whereas, owing to the fact of the English enemy having sacked and burned the former settlement of the city of Santa Thomé de la Guayana, which was founded on the banks of the Usupamo river, which empties into the Orinoco, at a distance and place which from the Fort to this Province can not be seen or protected by its artillery, and considering how advisable it is for its protection that the said city shall be situated and settled in view of the Fort and protected by its artillery, under the fire of the guns thereof, ordered that the new settlement should be founded on the site called Baratillo, where it could enjoy the conditions mentioned, his Honor having learned that it had a continuous and wholesome water supply from a source called 'la Arena,' and the land being good, fanned by all the breezes, superior to the other stations in that part, cut off from the mountains, with a happy temperature, conveniences for the raising of cattle, for its inhabitants, and outlets to the fisheries of the Orinoco river.

"Wherefore his Honor ordered: That in order that in the records of this visit there should appear the condition of the said new settlement, the Lieutenant of the Royal Officers, together with the present Notary, shall go and investigate the number of houses that have been built, and make a minute thereof, giving the owners and materials, immediately following this edict, through which his Honor so ordered and signed, to which I certify.

" ESPINOSA.

" Before me—

" DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
" Royal and Public Notary."

Here follows the investigation of the condition of this new town of Guayana, and on page 80, reverse, appears "a statement of the armed men needed by the settlements of Capuchin converts of this Province of Guayana, for their protection from the constant persecutions of the Carib Indians bent on their

destruction and on preventing conversions; which statement, pursuant to the resolution of the said Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, which was made known to me by his scrivener, I, Friar Augustin de Olot, Prefect of the said conversions and Mission, make and sign as follows:

"Firstly, for the town of Nuestra Señora de la Concepcion de Suay, which is distant two and a half hours from this city, one armed man....	1
"Item.—For the town and Mission of Santa Barbara de Payarama, one league distant from this city, one armed man.....	1
"Item.—For the town and Mission of La Virgen de los Angeles de Amaruca, which is five leagues distant from this city, in a position made dangerous by the Caribs, and having a fort and four two-pound cannon, there armed men.....	3
"Item.—For the town and Mission of San Antonio de Carony, which is eight leagues distant from this city, on the banks of the Carony river, in an advanced position, the frontier of the Caribs, two armed men and an artilleryman to manage the four guns of the fort the Mission has constructed for the defence of the said town.....	3
"Item.—For the town of San Francisco de Alta-gracia, a day and a half by road from this city, two armed men .....	2
"Item.—For the town and Mission of San Joseph de Capapuy, which is two days by road from this city, two armed men.....	2
"Item.—For the town of La Divina Pastora de el Yucuari, two and a half days by road from this city, three armed men .....	3
"Item.—For the settlement which it has been determined by your Honor, by agreement with me, to found on the banks of the Yuruari river, the Carib frontier, distant four days' travel from this city, where a fort is to be constructed, with four swivel guns, six armed men..	6
"Total.....	21

"All of which amount to twenty-one men, who should reside in the said towns with a sure salary to support and clothe them, for without this they can not remain, as the Mission has no funds from which to permanently feed and clothe them. And at times of offensive acts on the part of enemies and news of invasion more reinforcements will be necessary, as occasion may demand, which, at the proper time, will be requested of whoever may command this place and Presidio; and in order that the Governor and Captain General of this Province may determine what he considers best fitted to the service of God and of the King our Master, I place this in his hands.

"Done in the city of Santo Thomé de la Guayana on the twenty-fifth day of the month of February of the year seven-teen hundred and forty-three.

"FRIAR AUGUSTIN DE OLOT, Prefect."

Next follow the list and rolls of the residents and their families who are distributed within the limits of this city of Santo Thomé de la Guayana and the Mission towns of the Reverend Capuchin Fathers of this Province, which were made up by Captain Felisardo de Almasan, in obedience to the orders of the Governor and Captain General, and the edict for the organization of a militia company.

---

On page 90, reverse, appears a letter addressed to the Governor and Captain General, Don Gregorio Montero, by the Fathers of the Mission of Nuestra Señora de los Angeles de Pararuma, dated November 28, 1742, to discover how to aid the infantry escort which for two years (*sic*), which reads as follows:

"To the Governor and Captain General, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros.

"MY DEAR SIR: These Missions being absolutely in need because the pay for the infantry, which for two years has been our escort, has not come, I am constrained to have the Father Procurator of these Missions, Roque Lubian, go to the said city, to confer with your Honor, firstly: That provision be made looking towards assisting the said infantry until the pay



shall arrive, which I have hopes has been, or will be, collected in Santa Fé; secondly, that, as an eye witness, he may personally state the grievous injuries done us by the Caribs, who endeavor by every means to destroy these Missions and take the lives of the missionaries and soldiers who cultivate them, as I have represented to Y. H. in another letter of the twenty-third of June of this year, to which I refer.

"Your Honor must be on this occasion (since I rely on your mercy) our protector and supporter for the glory of God and the welfare of souls. From Texas down I can look to no one save your Honor, who is the nearest resort to whom to appeal. The aforesaid Father is in possession of all the facts, and is well grounded in the system, and can, by word, better than I, in writing, lay before your Honor the reason for this trip; wherefore I do not dilate so as not to molest your Honor, whose life I desire heaven may prosper many years.

"Missions of Orinoco, in the settlement of Nuestra Señora de los Angeles de Pararuma, November twenty-eighth, seventeen hundred and forty-two.

"To the Governor and Captain General. Your servant and Chaplain kisses your Honor's hands.

"MANUEL ROMAN,  
"Vice-Superior of the Missions of Orinoco  
"of the Society of Jesus."

"To that of your Honor, which I have just received, of April twenty-third, I reply that I am very far from endeavoring to have boats from these Missions go below the Fort of Guayana, of which Y. H. knows I would complain bitterly, and I would reprehend any one who should attempt to make such trips without the express permission of your Honor, and his approval. The said Father will orally state to your Honor what I feel on this point."

---

Fray Salvador Romero, of the regular Order of St. Francis, Procurator-General, Apostolic Missionary, and Commissary of the Missions and Missionary Schools of the Immaculate Con-

ception of Piritu, with the Venerable Advisory Board of this holy Community, together met and assembled in the town of Jesus, María y Joseph de Caigua, on the fourteenth day of the month of January of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, by resolution of the letter of the Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, in order that between us we may confer as to the efficacious method of settling the Carib Indians on the other bank of the Orinoco river, and thus save the Reverend Jesuit Fathers from the most grievous injuries, dangers, and misfortunes they incessantly suffer through the invasions of the Caribs from the Purney and Caura Rivers, attempting to dislodge them and destroy the lands of the Missions, wherefore they ask that steps be taken to prevent such serious incidents.

All of this being expressed in the letter of your Honor, as well as that you were informed in writing by the Father Superior, and personally by the Father Solicitor, Roque Lubian, of those Missions, and that knowing from these claims and pitiful representations of the Reverend Jesuit Fathers that the only adequate means of obviating their just fears, although imaginary injuries, is that we occupy Purney and Caura, where the Caribs most abound, first, to do a great good to the Reverend Jesuit Fathers, whom we always desire to serve with all our heart, and secondly, and principally, to widen and carry into effect the fervent desire which we always entertained, as is easy to prove, to remain in those parts, we entered quietly into investigating the method of maintaining ourselves on the Purney and Caura rivers for the subjugation of the Caribs. But as, at the instance of the Rev. Father Joseph Gumilla, ex-Superior of the Missions of the Rev. Jesuit Fathers, for the same purpose, with promises of favor, and together with the Governor, Don Carlos de Sucre, we went, carried away by the desire, without considering risks, to the city of Guayana, and thence to Purney and Caura where we were with the Caribs, and they refused to settle in towns, saying to us *what we have not decided to divulge until further urged*. From here, unutterably disconsolate, we went further up to the Uyape channel, and afterwards inland to

Tamanal and Taramuta, old seats of the Caribs, where, full of misery and plagues, we remained, with the humility befitting Apostolic workers, eight months, in order to see if by dint of suffering we could wean them from great error and the abhorrence they entertained because of the deceits and hostilities practiced against them, and which they do not conceal.

By reason of which, and for many other reasons which justify us—which it is necessary to make known to our King and Master (whom God preserve), as well as to the Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, in order that each, in so far as possible and he is empowered, may afford the means for so holy an end—at the present time it is very difficult, or better said, impossible, for us to settle the Purney and Caura, notwithstanding the well-digested considerations advanced by the Governor, the first being certain mentioned dangers of the Reverend Jesuit Fathers, who will be safer than we, since we would have to go and live in the very houses of the Caribs, and we lack the escort assigned to and accompanying the Jesuit Fathers, as well as the impossibility, owing to the long time necessary, of the Governor providing another like escort for our protection. And though the second consideration is the Agreement concluded in Guayana, in which were set forth limits and districts, which was approved by the King our Master (whom God preserve), we are not thereby, it appears, bound to impossibilities, and when they may not so seem, and that by Royal approval it is indispensable that we occupy all the localities by His Majesty to us granted, he must wish the same to apply to the other pious workers. Aside from the fact that from the lesser one should go *gradually* to the greater, and the only way being by first settling Purney and Caura, Yguana and Cabrutta (territory granted us by our King and Master), it seems that we should occupy it on the one hand, because of the obligation to occupy whatever is granted us, and on the other, because there is no other way of subjugating the Caribs with the means we at present have or the Governor can furnish us; which, if effected, will give enough work to the band of missionaries we now are, and to the aid that may be furnished by the fervent desires of the Governor and Cap-

tain General, which refers to the third and fourth considerations suggested by his Honor. And as this is all your Honor proposes to us, it is all we have until our King and Master shall provide other means, impossible to the Governor, we, desiring in the meanwhile (since the settling of Purney and Caura can not be effected) to aid in every way, have determined that our Reverend Father Friar Diego Francisco Ybañez, as the oldest Father of this holy community, go to the city of Guayana to meet the Governor and Reverend Father Procurator of the Missions of the Jesuit Fathers, to make known this our opinion and his, requesting (in due form and with the proper formalities benefiting the religious state, as the only and best adapted method for the end we all desire), that our territory designated by our King and Master be vacated, to wit, Yguana and Cabruta, and any other locality belonging to us; obtaining from the Governor whatever instruments he may be empowered to give, and sufficient for us to regain and repossess that which by right belongs to us, and for all we bestow upon him all the authority residing within us, and which by law may be needed until finally effected. And in order that the accidents and chances that may occur shall not serve to frustrate so holy a work, we determine that the said Reverend Father be accompanied by the Rev. Father Friar Alonzo Rubio and the Rev. Father Cristobal Martinez, upon whom, successively, we confer the same authority and powers. And we charge each and all to observe good conduct and religious peace, and for greater certainty we impose upon them holy obedience. And in order that this our determination and will may have sufficient force and weight, and that it may be produced at any time when necessary and not be objected to, we sign it with our hands and name, and seal it with the great seal of our office, and countersign it by the Secretary of the Venerable Advisory Board, in said town, day, month, and year *ut supra*.

FRIAR SALVADOR ROMERO,  
Commissary of Piritu.  
FRIAR MATHIAS GARCIA,  
Adviser.

By order of the Very Reverend and Venerable Advisory Board of these Missions of Piritu.

FRIAR BERNARDINO CAMACHO Y BEDOYA,  
Secretary and Notary of the Advisory Board.

---

His Honor, the Governor and Captain General, having considered the foregoing letter of credence, said that for the necessary purposes in the premises it be attached to the credentials of the Rev. Father Roque Lubian; and that as regards disputed matters of jurisdictional boundaries, let the said Rev. Father Friar Diego Francisco Ybañez be informed that His Majesty, having learned of the discord existing between the city of San Sebastian, of the Province of Venezuela, and that of Nueva Barcelona, was pleased to issue Royal Rescripts, pursuant to which the Government of Barcelona summoned the said cities; and, H. M. commanding that each of the interested parties exercise their rights where and how it might see fit, His Honor ordered that there be no violation thereof. And the Reverend community of Franciscan Missionaries of the Province of Nueva Barcelona, being informed of the same latest Royal Rescripts, must observe, obey and execute what is thus commanded by H. M.

His Honor so ordered and signed, to which I certify.

DON GREGORIO ESPINOSA.

The above edict was issued by Señor Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Brigadier of the Armies of H. M., his Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, who signed it in this city of Guayana on the second day of the month of March of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

Before me—

DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
*Royal and Public Notary.*

Immediately thereafter I, the Notary, personally notified and made known the foregoing edict to Friar Diego Francisco Ybañez, to which I certify.

ALCALA, *Notary.*

NOTE.—On the tenth day of March of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, I furnished an exemplified copy of the Letter and annexed edict preceding this Note to the Rev. Father Friar Diego Francisco Ybañez, covering four leaves.

ALCALA, *Notary.*

---

In this Presidio of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, on the second day of the month of May, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, Señor Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Brigadier of the armies of H. M., his Governor and Captain General of these Provinces of Guayana, Nueva Andalucia, and their Royal lands, for the King our Master, said: That whereas, his Honor, being engaged in the visit to this Province and the Missions within its districts, at the same time seeing to the execution of Royal Rescripts of H. M., issued in Pardo on the ninth of February of seventeen hundred and forty, relating to the construction of the Fort which it has been decided to erect on the Orinoco river; and in Aranjuez on the ninth of June, seventeen hundred and forty, relating to the investigation of the existence of gold and silver, and report to H. M. as in said Royal Rescript determined, has received an extraordinary mail, sent from Cumana on the fourteenth of February last by the Commandant at Arms, the Officials of the Royal Treasury, and the Chief Alcalde, in whom, owing to the absence of his Honor, the superior jurisdiction is vested, giving him minute particulars of English war armaments, and of some that are gathering in their windward colonies, and of other corsairs that annoy the coasts from Cape Guadera to the mouths of the Orinoco; at the same time that along this river is spread the news that three or four English sloops had been at its mouths, of which, through pilots which his Honor sent on his arrival at this Presidio to reconnoitre up to the said mouths, information has been secured to the effect that some English vessels or corsairs had run up and down the coast; that one having been lost and wrecked, an Englishman, one of those saved from the said wrecked vessel, was taken prisoner and brought to this garrison, and, for want of an interpreter, it has not been possible to obtain more formal particulars than the

foregoing; and other information which the pilots furnish to the effect that the Guarauna Nation—Indians of the mouths of the river—have killed another Englishman and prevented the landing of some others; and that our pilots, being defeated by the Guaraunas in action, they were well received, as they were Spaniards, and they imparted the information herein given.

And as the hostilities growing out of the war in the Colony under him are notorious, and demand the greatest care and attention of his Honor, urging and impelling him for the present to carefully investigate the news contained in the said notices from Cumana, in order to come to the defence of the advance posts and Royal forts, and therefore, being unable now to continue the visit to this Province as far as the Missions of the Jesuit Fathers of the upper Orinoco, owing to the great distance and the long time necessary for the trip, visit, and return to the city of Cumana, seat of this Government; and not having any person in this Presidio to appoint for the purpose, with the necessary commission and authority; therefore he should suspend, and suspended, for the present the visit to the said up-river Missions, to continue the same personally whenever and in whatever manner it may be possible.

And in order to render a formal report to H. M. of what has thus far been done, he ordered that the Angostura (narrows) of the said Orinoco river be visited, which trip is supposed to require six or eight days, accompanied by the pilots and the Reverend Fathers who may wish to join his Honor, if they have not reconnoitered the same, or are best acquainted therewith, or its territory. To which end, this will be made known to them through a polite message, and his Honor designates the fourth instant to set sail.

And he orders that upon his return to this Presidio there shall be held a general meeting (without the participation of his Honor) of the Commandant of this Province; the Reverend Prefect of Capuchins, and the Assistant Father Friar Augustin de Olot, and Friar Benito de Moya; the Rev. Father Roque Lubian, Procurator-General of the Jesuit Missions, elected with letter of credence, which he presented to his Honor, to

represent his Superior and Reverend community in this visit, meetings, reports, and whatever else may be necessary ; Friar Diego Francisco Ybañez, of the Franciscan order, Adviser, and the oldest priest in the Missions of Piritu, with like credentials, both of which shall be entered in these records ; the Captain of infantry of the Castle of this city, and the Lieutenant of Royal officers.

And as it is advisable that their reports and whatever else may occur to them at said meeting shall be framed after mature reflection, in order that they may be examined and studied exhaustively, and meet the requirements of honor and conscience, as each one finds them best adapted to the service of God and the King, the points to be treated and deliberated in order to arrive at the most advisable solution, and report to H. M. such as need his Royal decision, are now declared to be (and they will be informed thereof), as follows, to wit :

The first: Where do they judge it most convenient to erect the fort H. M. has decided to construct on the Orinoco river ? Whether on Fajardo Island, or at Angostura, or the Limones Channel ? What force do they consider necessary ; how many infantrymen ; and what reasons are advanced for considering the place named in the report of each as the best fitted for the fortification ?

The second is: The present condition of each community, and what settlements they consider should be carried forward or founded to secure passage to the New Kingdom of Granada, trade, and the cruelty of the Carib Indians, and to extend evangelical preaching, in the understanding that, in obedience to Royal Laws, and later Royal Decrees of H. M., there should not and can not be any attempts at conquests, which are rendered more impossible by the demands of the present war with the Anglican Nation ; nor incur extraordinary expenses of moment without previous Royal commands. But for the purpose of settling, attracting and converting, through preaching, all possible nations, and of advancing both Missions in order that their settlements and conversions may become united, His Honor will furnish the aid and escorts the



present state of war (which is to be taken into consideration) will permit, and will inform H. M. of what may be necessary for the other purposes which can not at the present time be effected, and which may be deemed advisable.

The third is: What progress is each of the Rev. communities making at present, and what do the Rev. Franciscan Fathers propose doing with the thirty-nine Evangelical workers who recently arrived to propagate our Holy Catholic Faith in their respective districts? They should all endeavor to work incessantly in every way, since they are managed and maintained at a heavy expenditure of the Royal Treasury and the Catholic zeal of the King our Master, without urging, in view of the grave demands of the war, these expeditions such as that which has just been effected in the sending of the thirty-nine Missionaries; no doubt being entertained of the abundant good results brought about by both, which his Honor clearly recognizes, and for which he extends his thanks.

And in order that they the more effectually prepare their reports with respect to the force to be provided, there are left in the possession of the Lieutenant of the Royal Officers the Royal Decree and the Instruction of H. M. and the instructive memorials of the Rev. Father Joseph Gumilla and the Marquis de San Felipe y Santiago, which will be read, examined and digested by those named for this meeting not for the purpose of refuting them, but only to convince themselves and make up their reports with a knowledge of the antecedents and of what has been decided up to date by H. M., since on his Honor's return to this Presidio he can only wait to hear the reports of the meeting, to determine what is expedient for the present, and to report to H. M.

His Honor so ordered and signed, to which I certify.

ESPINOSA.

Before me—

ANTONIO DE ALCALA.

Royal and Public Notary.

---

Then follow the writs served on several parties, summoning them to a meeting in order that the Governor, Don Gregorio

Espinosa, might present his diary of his visit to Angostura on the Orinoco, which is as follows :

*Page 103, reverse.*—"Diary of the trip to Angostura being made by Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Brigadier of the Armies of H. M., his Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, up the Orinoco, accompanied by the Reverend Fathers Friar Benito de Moya, Assistant Judge of the Catalan Capuchins, doing evangelical work in this Province of Guayana; Friar Alonso Rubio and Friar Cristobal Martinez, Apostolic missionaries of the conversion of Piritu, Franciscan clergymen; the Commandant of Guayana, Don Francisco Montañez de la Cueva; the Adjutant, Alonso Brumal; and as guides, the Adjutant of Guayana, Pedro de Cos, Don Felix de Armazon, Lieutenant Juan Antonio Bonalde, Joseph Hernandez, and four experienced soldiers from the castles of Cumana; ten *Pardos* (half-breeds) armed, residents of the Province, and the majority Orinoco pilots; two well-armed launches, commanded by Luis Anton and Gonzalo Estevez, and the Orinoco and coast of Paria pilots, Don Marcos and Don Carlos Marcano, with eighteen Guayquerice Indians, archers, and oarsmen, and three *curianas* (canoes) with Guayana, Saliba, and Guarauno Indians, there being eighteen Indians therein, and they serve as tenders; and two linguists, or interpreters.

"They set sail from Puerto Real del Castillo de San Francisco de Asis, of Guayana, on the fourth day of March of this year, and navigated the Orinoco up-stream with a fresh wind, as far as the mouth of the Carony river, where we arrived at five p. m., reconnoitering in this portion of Guayana only Fajardo Island, which is composed of two islands, as it is divided by a branch, and Joseph Hernandez, with all the pilots unanimously and of one accord, said that when the river is high, of the smaller island on the upper side there can only be seen the trees on the two small hills which compose it, and that the rest is inundated; that the larger island, on the lower side, is not all inundated, but the greater part is, and that from the shore-line thereof to the Carony river lies a distance equal to the range of a three-pounder, and from the

other side of the larger island, from the heights which are not inundated, to the river bank the distance is greater than that noted. And they all said that on the side of the bank which constitutes the mainland with Nueva Barcelona, when the river is rising and high, they have navigated and can navigate at a distance of two leagues and more from the Island of Fajardo over the savannah without being seen from the fort, should one be constructed on the said Island of Fajardo. At this point I ordered going into camp, which was done on the beach at the mouth of the Carony river, and the proper guards were stationed. All went well.

"On the fifth day the convoys set sail with a favoring breeze, and a light having been observed at Currucay cove forty armed men went ashore, and we found that behind the landing place a resident of Guayana, named Paules, was encamped with a dug-out and a canoe, engaged in turtle fishing—nothing having occurred on the Orinoco. This individual presented me a large jar of butter, lard and five turtles. The men embarked and we continued the trip until nightfall, when we went into camp beyond Currucay cove on this bank of Guayana, and passed the night without anything occurring.

"On the sixth day we continued on our way with a slack breeze, and from the place called Carapo the Carocies began to make signal fires on this Guayana side, and as we advanced in our sailing up-stream, so all day did the fires keep following us, and having discovered Caribs on the Island of Amapuru, which lies at the mouth of Angostura, the launch in which I, the said Governor, was, made for it, and thirty armed men were landed, who succeeded in seeing one Carib on land, and a large number already in the dug-outs, as they all abandoned the island and went to their own lands on the shore on this side. We found their huts and many eggs and turtles, and we awaited the other launch and canoes, which arrived a half hour later.

"I ordered camp to be made on this island, and with one launch the said Reverend Fathers and the Commandant, Don Francisco Montañez, four of the most skillful men, and two

more rowers, the trip was continued to Angostura, on the shore whereof we landed, and having seen and reconnoitered it, Joseph Hernandez said that all that could be seen of the rocky islet in the middle of the Orinoco and of the said Angostura during the rising and high water was a tree which stood at the top. That in this part of Guayana, at the place he showed us, when, by order of Señor Don Carlos Sucre, the engineer, Don Antonio Jordan, came to reconnoitre it with the intention of constructing there the fortification he might be able to with the encouragement zealously afforded him by Señor Sucre and Father Joseph Gumilla, the said engineer, with the laboring men, built a house after the fashion of the country, at the construction of which there were, of those present, Adjutant Pedro de Cos and Joseph Francisco de la Riva, with the intention of continuing pursuant to the orders they carried, and the hope of aid, and with the other necessary things which had been furnished them. But that their supplies having given out, and no assistance having arrived, they suffered hunger and need for thirty-one days, eating only fish which they caught in casting nets; and that the men not wishing to suffer more, said of one accord to said engineers, that if they did not come they would go in search of assistance, and would leave them alone, at which the said engineer ordered the said house to be set on fire, and they all withdrew to Guayana.

“And they likewise said that all this territory was subject to overflow, except a small hill, which is (and we reconnoitered it) further inland. In the upper part it is in front of the said rock, which lies in the middle of the river, so that although a fort should be built on the latter it can not prevent the passage of all boats, because they can freely navigate by the coast in front overflowed by the branch which divides the said rock, whose islet covers and guards any boat that may navigate its branch, which can not be seen, as this islet or large rock is opposite the said small hill, where a battery might be set up. And, although it be attempted on the said opposite coast, which forms the mainland with Nueva Barcelona, it would be useless, because the fort should be built on another

small hill, which is observable further inland, which, aside from not having sufficient range to cover Angostura, would not even prevent the passage of boats on this coast of Guayana up-stream, and it would be necessary to construct a fortification on the hills on both banks; to which may be added the fact, upon which all the guides universally agree, that there are no arable lands on either side, except beyond Angostura, at the places occupied by the Caribs of Curomotopo, Purvey, Caura, and Chachipo; for which reason it seems to them that if a fort were constructed at Angostura, and through any accident it should lack supplies, as a settlement, with farms in the neighborhood, could not be founded, the garrison would find itself compelled to abandon the fortification and seek the remedy, as did the said engineer Jordan and his men; and that, aside from the fact that the transportation of supplies to this place (and in time of high water it would take ten days of navigation from Guayana to Angostura) would be no less uncertain and difficult. In all of which the guides of the whole land were agreed and of one accord, as they had seen and reconnoitered it and navigated the river, some of them for a longer space than twenty years, during the time the Caribs have been at peace with the Capuchin Fathers and with the residents of Guayana.

"Whereupon the men embarked, and we returned in the direction of the said island and settlement, where the convoy remained; and we reached it about an hour after nightfall, where we found the three canoes loaded with eggs. And I there ordered the two launches to take out ballast and load with turtles for provision, which was done; and one hundred and thirty turtles were taken on board, and a large quantity of the eggs thereof. All the men ate on the island as much as they wished of one and the other, and there remained thereon more than one hundred turtles and a great quantity of eggs for lack of boats.

"We noticed that, notwithstanding it was night, by the light of the fires the sands as well as the rocks sparkled greatly, and as it appeared like mineral I ordered a piece of stone to be broken with an axe and to be placed on board, as was done.

And having passed the night in the settlement of the Caribs, with the proper guards and sentries, many fires of the Caribs were noticed on the coast, but nothing occurred.

"On the seventh day, an hour before daybreak, we put ourselves in navigation, shaping the course towards Guayana, and we used the oars, with a head wind, as far as Carapo, where we arrived. We went into camp, mounting the proper guards and sentries.

"On the said seventh day, an hour before nightfall, we broke camp, the men embarked, and we set sail with a head wind, which died out at midnight, and at daybreak we were within sight of the Island of Fajardo. We arrived at eight o'clock a. m., rowing incessantly all night, and we landed at the lower end of the said mouth and coast of Guayana.

"On the eighth day, at eight o'clock in the morning, where I ordered them into camp (*sic*) to mount guard and keep a proper watch, as the wind and the current were strongly against us.

"On the eighth day, already encamped, some dragon's-blood trees were examined, and a great number of others, which, upon having the bark removed and cut up, were as white as snow, and within five minutes' time, more or less, assumed a deep carmine color, and it appearing a dye-wood I gave it the name of 'Carmin,' in Spanish; and the guides and Indians stated that the said trees in the Guayano tongue are called *palo guatan*, and in the Carib tongue *arare*, and in the Cumanagota tongue *paraguaytay*. Whereupon I ordered a lot of about five *arrobas* (125 lbs.) to be cut, which was done, and it was placed in the launches for experimenting, because by simply rubbing cambric with the wood the former was dyed a carmine color, and although it was washed in lime juice and another piece separately in water, the color became deeper and remained more brilliant.

"At nightfall of this day camp was struck, and we started with the oars with a head-wind which kept increasing, and the current still more, so that between eight and nine o'clock at night we anchored in the middle of the river, and we remained there until 2 a. m., when the weather began to improve and we navigated with the oars as far as Guayana, where

we anchored to-day, the ninth of March of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, at Puerto Real, without any mishap or hitch during the whole trip.

" DON GREGORIO DE ESPINOSA.

" FRIAR BENITO DE MOYA.

" FRIAR ALONSO RUBIO.

" FRIAR CRISTOBAL MARTINEZ.

" FRANCISCO MONTAÑEZ DE LA CUEVA.

" FELIX DE ALMARAN.

" JUAN ANTONIO BONALDES.

" ALONSO BRUSUAL.

" PEDRO DE COS.

" JOSEPH HERNANDEZ."

*Meeting; page 111.*—"In the city of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, on the tenth of March, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, there met in these houses wherein dwells his Honor Señor Don Gregorio de Espinosa de los Monteros, Brigadier of the armies of H. M., his Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, to wit: His Honor the said Governor and Captain General; the Very Reverend Fathers Friar Agustin de Olot, Prefect, Friar Benito de Moya, Assistant Judge, Capuchin clergymen, Missionaries of the Orinoco; Friar Diego Francisco Ybañez, Franciscan priest from Piritu; the Reverend Father Roque Lubian, of the Society of Jesus, also a Missionary of the Orinoco; Don Francisco Montañez de la Cueva, Commandant of this Province; Don Vicente Franco, Captain of Infantry of the castle of San Francisco de Asis; Don Juan de Dios Valdes, Lieutenant thereof and of the Royal Officers, who, being met and assembled to treat and confer as to what had best be done with respect to the points mentioned in the edict of the second instant, said:

"That with knowledge, and fully apprised of the said points, each one by himself had considered what was most important and advisable for the service of both Majesties, in accordance with his duties, and that they have legally put their reports in writing, signed with their hands, as is their custom, and

they produced the same and placed them in the hands of his Honor, who, having considered them, ordered them to be filed, and this meeting adjourned, the minutes being signed by the said Governor and the others mentioned, to which I certify.

“ DON GREGORIO ESPINOSA.

“ FRANCISCO MONTAÑEZ DE LA CUEVA.

“ VICENTE FRANCO.

“ JUAN DE DIOS VALDEZ.

“ FRIAR AUGUSTIN DE OLOT, Prefect.

“ FRIAR BENITO DE MOYA.

“ FRIAR DIEGO FRANCISCO YBAÑEZ.

“ ROQUE LUBIAN, of the Society of Jesus.

“ Before me—

DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
Royal and Public Notary.”

---

*Reports.*—On page 112 appear the reports of Don Francisco Montañez de la Cueva (*sic*), Captain of Infantry, and of his Lieutenant, Don Juan de Dios Valdes, which are as follows:

“ In view of the points contained in the edict of the Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, dated the second instant, which have been made known to the Commandant of this Province, Don Francisco Montañez de la Cueva; the Captain of Infantry, Don Vicente Franco; to his Lieutenant, Don Juan de Dios Valdes, who is also Lieutenant of Royal Officers, they being well apprised thereof, and considering what they have seen and experienced respecting the points submitted to them, answer:

“ That as regards the first—the fortification it has been determined to construct on the Orinoco—they hold it to be advisable (in order that the desired ends may be accomplished therewith and the expenses thereof be raised) to build it on the Limones Channel, either on the mainland, on the northern part thereof, or on the island which lies between the said Channel and the great Orinoco river, because experience teaches that with it the passage the Carib Indians and foreign nations have to go up and down in this locality with their illicit trade will be



closed, as is evidenced by the measurements of firing ranges which your Honor has made. And thus secure, with the castle of San Francisco de Asis (which is founded on the southern coast, in front of the said island and Limones Channel), not only the benefit of having the said Orinoco passage barred, but also the protection by said fortifications of the new subjugations of the Reverend Capuchin Fathers now founded and to be founded. And the discovered gold and silver mines that may in time be worked, should there be any one to bear the expense, and which are in the district of the said new subjugations and the founded settlement of Sante Thomé de la Guayana, should the new fortification be built on the Island of Faxardo, or at places in the vicinity of Angostura, would be unprotected and abandoned, aside from the fact that in these localities the custody and care of said fortification demands a larger body of infantry than that required for the increase in the fortifications of the said Limones Channel, because in the latter place, with an addition of sixty men to the one hundred making up the garrison of the Castle of San Francisco de Asis, there will be sufficient troops for the guard which is to remain in the new settlement, or rather fortification that may be built on the said Limones Channel, and for the escort which the Reverend Capuchin Fathers may need to hold the towns they have founded with the converted Indians, and to be able to treat with others of the numerous heathens inhabiting the territory to be discovered in the jurisdiction assigned to the said Reverend Capuchin Fathers for evangelization, and also to furnish the necessary garrison, the battery which it is indispensable to build on the hill called the Padraastro, which commands the said Castle of San Francisco de Asis, and the escort furnished the Supercargo who goes every year to the city of Santa Fé to collect the tax. It is all one body of troops, and it will enjoy the conveniences of the already settled locality, together with those offered by the abundance of very fertile and fruitful lands for raising corn, yucca, rice, cacao, sugar cane, and other products and edible roots, which can be cultivated for the benefit of the inhabitants living in the said places on the Limones Channel, and the city of Santo Thomé

de la Guayana, founded within cannon range of the said Castle.

"And as regards the rest, they refer to the opinion and report of the Reverend Missionary Fathers summoned for the same meeting, with which we fully agree as being the most favorable vote—that which the said Reverend Fathers can give as experienced guides of the country, and skillful workers in conversions of many years' standing. We so set forth legally.

"In testimony whereof we give the present to serve as our vote and report in the meeting for which we are summoned.

"Signed in this city of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, on the tenth day of the month of March, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

"FRANCISCO MONTAÑEZ DE LA CUEVA.

"VICENTE FRANCO.

"JUAN DE DIOS VALDES."

(Next follows the gift of cannons and warlike stores of the Commandant Don Francisco Montañez de la Cueva for the progress in conversions that may be made by the Reverend Capuchin Fathers, numbering now thirty-nine subjects who have arrived intended for the said Mission, and in order that they may begin the subjugation of the Indians of this Orinoco river), (page 114, reverse) "let them found a town on the bank thereof, on the northern coast, and at the place called Pau, sixteen leagues distant from Angostura, on the upper part of the river, with the assistance which his Honor, the said Governor, may give for the purpose. Establishing on the bank of the said Orinoco river, at the place they may consider the best adapted, a stronghold, or fort, which I consider of great importance to restrain the audacity of the Carib Indian nation, which is opposed to all conversion of the other nations, and which may serve as a way-point to receive and store the supplies and assistance that may be intended for distribution among the settlements to be founded with the Indians that may be converted on the Purvey and Caura, and other places in their jurisdiction; and for the defense of this first settlement of Pau, I donate to His Majesty"—(here is expressed the number of cannons, muskets, &c).

*Page 114, reverse.*—Opinion of the Very Reverend Father Prefect, Friar Augustin de Olot, regarding the propositions of the Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, which is as follows:

“Firstly. That the fort on the Orinoco be constructed on the Limones Channel or on the island in said channel, and that the Padrastró of the Castle of San Francisco de Asis be fortified, with the force that your Honor may have considered and planned as necessary.

“*Item.*—That the troops for garrisoning the three forts be one hundred and sixty men, and that twenty-five thereof be detailed for the escort for these Missions and discoveries on land, with a veteran Captain, and that to the latter be paid a competent salary, and in default thereof, to some other of the remaining skilled guides which the Mission has at the disposal of the Reverend Father Prefect and the Governor; and that the said Captain should reside and be present in the Mission, and command the troops detailed in invasions and functions.

“*Item.*—The Limones channel and the Padrastró being once fortified the Orinoco is closed, all trade of Caribs and foreigners is prevented, and this land and the Missions rendered safe, which is the best, and as such has always been settled. And with this key the Missions of the Very Rev. Franciscan Fathers, and of the Most Rev. Jesuit Fathers, are made secure, which the Presidio and forts of Fajardo or Angostura can never do, owing to their uninhabitable state by reason of plagues, want of woods, and difficulties in the way of aid, and owing to the other reasons given by the V. R. F. Joseph Gumilla, of the Illustrious Society, and the Marquis de San Phelipe y Santiago, as appears from their memorials presented to His Majesty.

“*Item.*—As regards the present condition of this Mission, your Honor has already paid his visit, and he is apprised of the want of means in which it finds itself, and how, for four years, the alms have not been collected in Caracas, nor are there any hopes of collecting them, according to the information I have just received from the holy missionary and Procurator, sent for the purpose, and of the backwardness we have

suffered through the invasion, burning, and sacking by the English enemy. And that to insure the passage to Santa Fé, prevent the trading, going up and coming down of Caribs and other nations, and to extend the preaching of the Holy Gospel without particular risk, H. M. (whom may God preserve), should order the forts built, as has been set forth. And that there should always be kept on hand two launches at the foot of said forts to intercept the boats which, under cover of night, shall succeed in evading the fires of the castle and batteries.

*Item.*—As regards the advances that this Community proposes, they are: To retain the seven Mission towns it now has, and to found another of the nation of Panacayo Indians, inland, on the frontier of the Caribs, and construct therein a stronghold in view of a probable defence, and to discover and penetrate into new lands and Nations, as your Honor is informed, of whom I have requested the necessary guard for such purpose. This is what I opine and should represent respecting the three points submitted, taught by the practice and experience of nineteen years which I have had as one of the first founders of these existing Missions.

“To which I certify in this (*sic*) of Guayana, the tenth day of March of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

“FRIAR AUGUSTIN DE OLOT,

“Prefect.”

(Here follows the vote and opinion of the Father Friar Benito de Moya, which wholly agrees with the foregoing.)

---

*Page 117.*—Report of Father Lecturer, Friar Diego de Ybañez, Apostolic Missionary of Guayana:

“Before answering the first point it is to be supposed the Orinoco river should be fortified and jointly settled by Spaniards, for the following reasons:

“1. That foreigners may not occupy their lands.

“2. That they may not infest the Provinces of Cumana, Caracas, Maracaibo, and Santa Fé.

" 3. To prevent their trading with the said Provinces.

" 4. To prevent the taking out of Indian slaves of various nations which are sold them by the Caribs.

" 5. That the Missions of the Jesuit, Capuchin and Franciscan Fathers may be safe from the said foreigners.

" 6. That the gold mines discovered and to be discovered may be safe from them.

" 7. That having a sufficient gathering of people on the Orinoco, the Dutch of Esequivo, Verbis and Surinama may be easily dispossessed of the lands they occupy and of the mines they are working.

" 8. That the Carib Indians from the mouths of the Orinoco may not go up the Orinoco to make captive the Indians they sell aliens.

" 9. To prevent the many deaths the Caribs bring about in order to capture the Indians they sell.

" 10. To prevent the loss of the souls the Caribs kill and take captive.

" 11. That the Missions of the Capuchin, Jesuit and Franciscan Fathers may be freed of Carib Indians.

" 12. That the selfsame Carib Indians and very many other Indian nations living in the neighborhood of the Orinoco may be civilized and put in settlements.

" 13. That these Indians once settled, it may become easy to proceed to the settling of the Indians on the Amazon river and in the interior of this great Southern America, for, without establishing this system of posts, no forward step can be taken.

" 14. Because all the Orinoco, once settled with Spaniards and Indians, great profit will accrue to the Spanish Crown.

" 15. And last (in execution, which ought to be first in intention), because the Orinoco once fortified and settled by Spaniards, there will be brought about the salvation of innumerable Indians who live in its neighborhood, and there will also be effected, in time, the salvation of all the Indians that inhabit this extensive America.

" It should also be noted that to secure the ends in view in the foregoing reasons, it is incumbent, necessary, and imperative not only that the fort H. M. has decided on shall be

constructed, but that the Orinoco river should be settled by Spaniards (in the manner I shall state later) for the special reasons which here follow :

“ 1. That the fortification or fort of Guayana, and that which is to be constructed may be provided with soldiers ; for experience teaches that the soldiers after being two or three years in Guayana endeavor to get a substitute, or desert, because of the solitude of the land and lack of trade, in order to provide themselves with what is necessary.

“ 2. That the said forts, during invasions of the enemy, may be easily aided by the militia of the cities that may be founded.

“ 3. That the said forts may be easily provided with the necessary supplies, and with other things for the subsistence of the soldiers in said forts.

4. Because the two forts are insufficient to keep all the Indians who will be settled on the Orinoco in peace ; and experience has shown that the Indians only remain in settlements when there is a city of Spaniards near them, through fear of whom they do not take to the forests.

“ 5. Because the Indians living near the Spaniards, through communication with them, become domesticated with families, and become attached to and accustomed to live with them, and if by chance they run away from their settlement, they do not go to the forests, but go to live in the Spanish settlements.

“ 6. Because, by founding the sufficient number of cities, the strength and trade of the Provinces of Cumana, Caracas, Maracaibo and Santa Fé will be linked, whereby great profit will accrue to the Indians, the Spaniards, and the Royal Crown.

“ Because, by founding the proper number of Spanish cities, the Catholic Faith will be increased and exalted, and the salvation of all the Indians will be secured ; without which cities it is impossible to maintain the Holy Faith among the Indians owing to their slight capacity and great fickleness, for which purpose the two forts are not sufficient.

“ From all of said reasons it is made apparent that there are no other means that can be permanent to secure the ends aimed at, save the building of the fort, and the founding of the proper cities.

"This being considered, the answer to the first point submitted, is that the most convenient site for the erection of the fort, which H. M. orders to be constructed on the Orinoco, is in front of the fort of Guayana, below the mouth of the Limones channel, on the mainland and not on the island, for the reasons following :

"1. Because locating the fort on this site the principal purpose it is desired to achieve therewith is secured, *i. e.*, to prevent the passage of the Caribs and aliens; for, no matter which side he draws near, whoever passes will be seen by the fort he approaches, and if he passes in the middle of the river he will be seen by both forts and they will be able to prevent his passing, although at the time of high water it is not easy to pass in the middle of the river.

"2. Because the two forts, being united, each becomes stronger; for they can assist one another, which would not be the case were they distant from each other.

"3. Because located on this site with the city which will be added to it, it will serve as a protection to the Guarauno Indians which shall go on settling in its vicinity.

"4. Because on the said site they can easily provide themselves with supplies from the Guarauno Indians that may settle in the neighborhood, and also from the Mission towns of the Reverend Capuchin Fathers in the vicinity of Guayana.

"5. Because on said site of the Limones channel the fort can be constructed at less expense than on the Island of Faxardo, where it would be necessary to build three forts to be able to prevent the passage of the Caribs and foreigners; and also because on the Island of Faxardo it would be difficult to secure subsistence.

"6. Because, although at Angostura the river becomes narrower the difference between it and the narrows between Guayana and the Limones channel is slight, and it would also be necessary to construct two forts at the Angostura site in order to prevent the passage of the Caribs and aliens, and at the same time it would be necessary to maintain the castle of Guayana, which would redound to the detriment of the Royal Treasury.

"7. Because the Angostura site will present great difficulties in the way of securing subsistence, as it is very far from a settlement and there are no Indians in the neighborhood to settle.

"8. Because by being located on the Limones channel one fort can defend the other, since with only a small charge of powder a shot can reach from one side to the other.

"9. Because if the said fort be erected on the island in the Limones channel, on a dark night, owing to the shadow of the mainland, boats can pass, and the desired end will not be accomplished.

"10. Because the fort being located on the mainland could more easily be assisted by the people of the city and by those who may be in the said localities.

"The force considered necessary (in view of the present conditions and those which may in the future prevail should the gold mines be worked, together with the instructions which His Majesty commands be followed in the building of the fort), is a force to occupy one of the two plans which are drawn below, and either of the two can mount sixteen pieces of artillery and eight swivel guns, although with eight cannons and four swivel guns there will be sufficient force at present, because foreigners will not at this time go to any extraordinary cost to come and take possession of the poverty which now prevails in these localities.

"The infantry force considered necessary for the defence and guarding of this passage of the Orinoco and the Missions which are being founded is at least three hundred, or three hundred odd, men, for the reasons following:

"1. Because the fort of San Francisco de la Guayana needs one hundred men for its good defence.

"2. The fort on the Limones channel needs eighty men of the escort for its custody and defence.

"3. A small fort, which should be placed on the Padrastro of Guayana, should have at least twenty men. This small fort is very necessary, because from this Padrastro hill with muskets alone all the soldiers that might be in the Castle of San Francisco de la Guayana could be numbered among the



dead. And in times past the said Castle was taken by the French from the said Padraastro hill.

"4. Because the Reverend Capuchin Fathers at present need an escort of soldiers, from twenty-five to thirty strong.

"5. Because the Franciscan Fathers of Piritu need more than an escort of thirty men to again settle the site of Mamó, which is much invaded by Caribs. And its settlement is very necessary, because it is a place where every mail-carrier coming from Cumana to Guayana and going from Guayana to Cumana, and every one passing over this road makes a stop, there being no other place, owing to the water, in order that the animals may drink; and also because this place being once settled, the said parties and also the two forts would find therein supplies, especially fish, as they are very abundant in Lake Mamó; and also because the communication between Guayana and Cumana will be better united.

"6. Because thirty more escort soldiers are needed to begin a new city of Spaniards near the mouth of the Pao river and that of the Orinoco, which city is very necessary to subjugate and keep in peace the Carib Indian towns already founded in the Piritu Missions, and to go on settling other Caribs wherever it may be most advisable, and also to afford a passage to the lands where all the Caribs are.

"7. Because thirty or forty more escort soldiers are necessary to begin another city of Spaniards at the mouth of the Caura river where the whole force of the Carib Indians is, who sally forth to infest the whole Orinoco and to destroy the settlements of all the three Missions—the Franciscan, Capuchin, and Jesuits. It is to be noted here that the Franciscan and Capuchin Fathers need the three escorts referred to, and even many more, because they are the ones who advance against the whole strength of the Caribs; and H. M. granting the said escorts, with divine aid, they will settle all the Caribs in the same way they now have four settlements of Caribs founded.

"It is also noted that when the said escorts shall no longer be necessary in the said settlements, owing to the cities having been increased by a sufficient number of Spaniards, and the Mamó being safe from Caribs, these escorts will station themselves in settlements that may be most advanced toward the

inland barbarous Indians. And they will proceed to begin another city at the mouth of the Cuchivero river, thereby to enter upon the settlement of the Indians inhabiting its banks; and if the Franciscan Fathers had had these escorts the conversion would be much further advanced, and without them at the present time no step can be taken owing to the insolence of the Caribs, which should be settled first in order to proceed to the settlement of other nations. And it is also necessary to settle them to insure the settlement and trade of the Orinoco river. From all of which it clearly appears that three hundred, and even more, soldiers are necessary and imperative for the defence and security of the forts of Guayana and the Limones channel and of the Missions of the Capuchin and Franciscan Fathers, aside from the escorts the Jesuit Fathers need.

"Replying to the second point, it is stated that the present condition of the Community of the Franciscan Fathers of Piritu is: There are twenty-two settlements, of which fifteen are already Christianized, divided into six parishes, and seven are new mission towns. Of these seven towns, four are of Carib Indians, one of Cumanagoto Indians, and another of Palenque Indians, and the Cumanagotos and Palenques lived with the Caribs, and called themselves Caribs when they lived with them; and the other town is of Chaima Indians. Among these twenty-two towns are distributed the priests who have recently arrived from Spain and those of us who were already here. The recent comers have all experienced some illness owing to the change of temperature, and they have not all fully recovered. All of the recent comers are engaged in the study of the Indian language, and those who are already somewhat instructed therein are engaged in assisting the older ones in the education of the Indians and in the administering of the Sacraments.

"The towns considered as necessary to be founded to insure the passage to the New Kingdom of Granada, and to the spread and maintenance of the conversion of the Indians—Caribs as well as other nations—are the following:

"1. Immediately opposite the fort on the Limones channel a city of Spaniards is advisable, in order that, united with that

of Guayana, they may be stronger to bar the passage of the Orinoco river, the two forts watching the passage by water, and the two cities the land passage, which may be attempted by foreigners and the Caribs; and also that the two said cities of Guayana and the Limones channel may look to provisioning the two forts, and that the said new city may serve to maintain in peace and in the faith the settlements that may be founded with the Guarauna nation which inhabits the Cumana side.

"2. It is very necessary to found another Spanish city on the Carony river wherever the Reverend Capuchin Fathers may deem proper, in order to maintain in the conversion such towns as they may go on founding.

"3. It is imperative to found another city on the Pao river near the Orinoco, to maintain in peace and in the faith the towns of Carib Indians founded in the Missions of the Franciscan Fathers of Piritu, and to defend them from the Caribs of the forest, and to establish other settlements of Carib Indians from the Cumana side on the said Pao, and to afford a passage to settle those on the Guayana and Santa Fé side.

"4. Another Spanish city is absolutely necessary on the Caura river, where the greatest strength of the Caribs is, which shall serve to convert and afterwards preserve them in the faith, and to enter upon the conversion of other nations which in those parts the Caribs are settling; and which shall also serve to unite the trade of Sante Fé with Guayana.

"5. It is advisable to found another city on the Cumana side, opposite this bank, at the place that may be deemed the most advisable to facilitate the passage from one side to the other, so as to promptly furnish the assistance that may be needed by the foregoing city of Caura.

"6. Another city is needed on the Cuchivero river for the same purposes of the conversion of the Indians inhabiting it, and to insure the passage to Santa Fé.

"7. Another city is necessary on the Huarico river to connect the trade of Caracas with Guayana and Santa Fé.

"8. Other cities are needed on the upper Orinoco, which may be designated by the Reverend Jesuit Fathers.

“The method of populating these cities ought not to be at the expense of private individuals, as they are all ports, which are reserved for himself by H. M. If there are no means of populating them at the expense of the Royal Crown, it may be done in the following way, which, in my opinion, is the easiest and most efficacious: Firstly, His Majesty may (since the settling of the Orinoco river is so advisable for the Royal service, the salvation of souls, the honor of God, and the exaltation of His Holy Name), order and command that for the present the transportation of families to the Island of Havana and the Province of Caracas shall cease. And H. M. may justly command and order that all galleons sailing from islands for Cumana, Caracas, Maracaibo, and Santa Marta shall touch at Trinidad or at Cumana, and that each galleon shall bring the families corresponding to its tonnage, in the same manner as has been the practice in the galleons bound to Caracas and Havana, and that the families that they may bring shall be landed on the Island of Trinidad or at Cumana, whence they can be taken, at the expense of the Royal Treasury, to Guayana and the other cities that may be founded, as the greatest exigencies may require, some family or families always remaining on the Island of Trinidad in order that it may go on being settled by people and cacao plantations to the profit of the Spanish Nation and the increase of the Royal Treasury, to aid in the expense that must be incurred for the maintenance of the infantry on the Orinoco, to which end the revenues from the cities that may be founded will also subscribe; although it is always necessary, in order to gather the fruit of the vine to first spend some funds in planting it, and he who does not plant the vine can not gather the fruit thereof.

Secondly. H. M. may also order that the vessels of the Biscayan Company shall always bring some families from Biscay or Galicia, since two or three poor families they may take from each place in Biscay and in Galicia will not be missed in Spain, and much land can here be settled with their protection. Which families they may land either in Trinidad, in Cumana, or in Barcelona, wherever the vessels could arrive with the greatest convenience.

Thirdly. In order that the settling of these families on the Orinoco may be affected with the least possible expense to the Royal Treasury, and that the said families may not want work when they arrive, and that they may with the greatest ease lay out good farms or fields that may provide profits for them and the Royal Crown, it will be very advisable for H. M. to order that the officials of the Royal Treasury, in the name of the King, shall lend each of the families coming the sum of four or five hundred *pesos*, in such articles as they may need, and in one or more slaves—some of the families pledging themselves to the others to secure the Royal Treasury—which amount they may thereafter go on paying off in the products they may garner, and these products may afterwards serve to supply to the infantry, and to succor the families that may be coming subsequently in the same way. This method, I have heard it said, has been in vogue in some French colonies in America, whereby they have greatly increased in a very short time.

Fourthly. That in order that the families may be encouraged to come to the new cities H. M. order that each family coming to settle therein shall pay no Royal taxes for ten years, while they secure and make productive their farms.

Fifthly. That in order to increase husbandry, for the present no partition of lands be made in the said cities; but that each one sow the land he may find vacant, and by abandoning it for one full year, any one else may enter upon and cultivate it, as is done in the city of Barcelona.

“Sixthly. For the increase of cities and conversions it is very expedient that H. M. order that the Spaniards may take the Carib Indians that may not of their own will wish to become settled, and carry them to their houses and make use of them for the space of six years, under the condition that they teach them the Spanish language and the Christian doctrine, and that they shall in no way be held as slaves, and can not sell them, or give them to any person outside the same city, nor inside of it, unless such person be his son or companion who went with him to take them; and that when the six years have elapsed the Indian shall be free to live within the same city, or may go to one of the Mission towns.

"Seventhly. To give a start to the said cities on the said convenient sites, or on others that may be considered adaptable, each one of the respective missionaries may invite to his territory the families he can, wherever he may find them, and with them start the city, and subsequently take out from the Government the proper warrants for the distribution of the offices whenever there may be at least a dozen Spanish families congregated at the place that may seem adapted to its foundation; and afterwards, as time progresses, to go on soliciting families with which to increase it, in the same manner as is done with the settlements of Indians.

"Replying to the third point, it is stated: That the Franciscan Fathers intend this year to again settle the site of Mamó, having the escort of thirty men, and at the same time to start another town of Guaraunos one day's journey distant from the site on the Limones Channel, and, if it be possible, another town near this; and they also intend to found a city of Spaniards on the Pao river, near the Orinoco, if they have another escort of thirty soldiers, and in its vicinity found one or more Indian settlements. And they also intend this year to found a settlement near Onare of some Indian families that are in several bands, and of others which are fugitives from the towns, some living in the forest and others in the Province of Caracas. And they also intend, should they have the escort of forty soldiers, to go over to found a city of Spaniards on the Caura river, and such Carib settlements as they may be able to in its neighborhood, without which escorts no start can be given to the settlements on the three sites mentioned—Mamó, Pao, and Caura.

"This opinion I express with an experience of thirty-one years spent in this America in the conversion of Piritu of the Franciscan Fathers; giving notice that in the year seventeen hundred and twenty-three, being Prelate of the said conversions, by order of the Governor, Don Juan de la Fornera Sota, I reconnoitered the site of Angostura, examining the adjacent lands on the western side and on the northwestern, whence passes the road from the conversions to the said site of Angostura; and although it appeared to me to be a very good site for building the fort with a Spanish city, having now seen the Li-

mones Channel, it has seemed to me the latter is much better, for the reasons I have set forth ; and, in order that for all time this may appear as my opinion and report, I sign it in this city of Guayana for the purpose of producing it in the meeting the Governor and Captain General, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, intends to hold on the eighth day of the month of March, in the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

“FRIAR DIEGO FRANCISCO YBAÑEZ.”

(After the report appear the two plans following, with their notes—Pages 128 and 129) :

“*Report of Father Roque Lubian of the Society of Jesus—Page 130.*”

“Points which the Governor and Captain General, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, submitted to the meeting in Guayana, in order that each one present thereat shall determine what he shall deem best.

“1. Your Honor asks where it is deemed most advisable to construct the fort on the Orinoco, whether on the Island of Faxardo, at Angostura, or on the Limones Channel? What force is considered to be necessary ; what infantry troops, and what reasons combine to make the selection of the fortification on the spot mentioned in the report of each best adapted for the purpose?

“2. State the present condition of each community and the settlement it is proposed to advance to insure the passage to the New Kingdom, and to obviate the cruelties of the Caribs, bearing in mind, in the report, the war in which we are engaged with the Anglican Nation.

“3. In what progress are each of the Reverend Communities now engaged?

And I, being among the parties to express their opinion, as Procurator of the Orinoco Missions of the Society of Jesus, sent by my Superior on certain matters connected therewith, reply to the first: That it being necessary that the Orinoco be fortified for the safety of these Provinces, and to bar the passage to the hostilities of the Caribs, and to prevent the communication of foreigners, this work admits of no delay, else we

shall experience new insolence from both, as the malice of the Caribs gives no truce, even though they be invited peacefully. Wherefore I say it is true that at Angostura the passage may be closed, as the river runs narrow between the heights of two hills; but it seems that although the site may be adapted to the erection of fortresses, it lacks other very necessary conditions—there are no forests near adapted to cultivation, from which those who are to guard them could get subsistence. And if we speak of the Island of Faxardo, there also could a fort be built which could also impede the passage, nearer to Guayana and the Missions of the Reverend Capuchin Fathers than Angostura; but if the fort is to be built there with the redoubts belonging thereto for security, it is a long (although sure) work, and, under the circumstances of the present war, difficult to undertake. So that if we find a site that is not so removed from Guayana as Angostura—which is three days farther up—nor so difficult to fortify, under present circumstances, as is the Island of Faxardo, and which, on the other hand, shall block the passage against what is aimed at, it would undoubtedly be the best. And this can be done at the mouth of the Limones Channel, which is opposite the castle of Guayana on the mainland.

“The reasons which move me are, first, that the principal stronghold, which is the Presidio of Guayana, being already situated on the southern side, less expense will fall upon His Majesty, the passage will be closed, it can be built more quickly, which is what we purpose, and what is needed, securing the same end as at Angostura and at Faxardo Island, with advantages—for the fort being constructed on this site the Missions of the Reverend Capuchin Fathers would be protected and defended, while at Angostura they would not be. On Faxardo Island they are partly, not wholly, protected, and for the common good and fundamental defence it is advisable to have it on the said channel on the mainland.

“The second reason is, that located on this site, the settlements founded in Guayana to provide the necessary supplies and other things needed are nearer. The objections that there may be to putting the fort on the said site might be that it is



overflowed in winter time—about one vara at the highest water—and if the experts find that this objection may be overcome, the report does not cease to urge its erection there. The other objection is that all the forest contiguous to the Limones Channel is inundated for nearly a league in a straight line to the north, where boats could pass hidden by the forest, when the river is risen, without their being noticed by the new fortification; but as the forest is impenetrable, owing to the intricate network of underbrush and thorns, it is very unlikely that the Caribs or others desiring to pass could stop to open a way without being seen or noticed.

“Finally, let the river be closed, and let what has been aimed at for so many years be begun, and let it be wherever it may. As regards the force and infantry troops for guarding the fort with fifty more files for the present, it seems to me there will be sufficient.

“To the second.—‘State the present condition of each Community, and the settlement it is proposed to advance,’ &c.—I answer, firstly, with the substance of a letter which (*sic*) the Very Reverend Father Manuel Roman, Superior of the Orinoco Missions of the Society of Jesus, of seventeen hundred and forty-two, and it is as follows:

“‘To the Governor and Captain General Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros.

“‘MY DEAR SIR: Impelled by the danger and risk in which these Missions find themselves through the assaults and destructions we experience at every step, without being able to fish or till the clearings without danger of being seized, killed, or made captive by Caribs who endeavor by water and land to completely devastate these Missions, as is evidenced by many fatal cases which I omit, so as not to molest Y. H. with prolix accounts—impelled, I say, by everything to seek the protection of Y. H., begging you to put an end to so many evils (before we mourn the final ruin) by making a settlement of mulattoes, negroes, or half-breeds in the lands of the Caribs of Purney and Caura; and if this can not be done, that an entrance be made, with the precautions which the high judg-

ment of Y. H. may suggest, to the end of restraining the fury and haughtiness of the Caribs, and that there be restored to these Missions the captives taken therefrom, Salibas as well as Maypures and Quirupas. If they are not bridled these Missions can not subsist. Even communication between one settlement and another is embarrassed. At the beginning of this month a boat was *en route* with seventeen souls, Maypures, and two soldiers from Cabruta, and they have not appeared, either dead or alive. All that has been seen are huts of the Caribs on the road, and I infer that they killed the soldiers and led the Indians off captive. Many almost similar cases to this have happened.

“ ‘There is not a year that many captives do not come down to their lands in this vicinity. Twenty canoes, I have been told, have come down in these two months of May and June, passing on dark nights by the small fort of San Javier without oars, so as not to be observed.

“ ‘At this rate they will soon leave us without breadstuffs, and we shall find ourselves compelled to return to the colleges if the mercy of Y. H. does not remedy it. There is no remedy from Texas down. Is it advisable, sir, for the service of both Majesties, the credit and honor of Y. H., not to remedy it? I speak plainly. Undeceive me, Y. H., that we may take steps that may be most expedient for us. I trust in God that Y. H. is to pacify this Orinoco, and that it is to be greatly to your honor and the good of souls. I see that Y. H. is compelled to guard the coasts infested by enemies, and that the men taken therefrom may be needed. To this I answer, that to gain an entrance to Caribs a multitude of men is not necessary, only a good resolution; and by showing some consideration to those who enter, men will not be wanting in these environs of Barcelona who will make the entrance. Y. H., better than I, will evolve methods for the said entrance. It is my place to request and ask remedies, and your Honor's to apply them.’

“Up to this point goes the Father Superior, and from the contents of his letter, which only slightly hints at the state of the persecutions we suffer from the Caribs, Y. H. may glean the danger our Missions are in, which Missions, besides being

the most persecuted, are the most removed from resort to Y. H. They are the most persecuted in the limits of the government of Y. H., for there may well be other Missions also for a time attacked, but in the end, through the warmth and protection of Y. H., the persecutions cease, although they may not end. When can it be shown that in the part of the vineyard allotted to us the plots of the enemies of Christianity have stopped or ceased? From the first foundation stone of our subjugations, which was placed upon the labors and vigils of the missionaries, who can say that there has been surcease or any night without vigils? This can only be explained by him who suffers it without the hope of resort to Y. H. As the distance is so great, to invoke the assistance which would succor us, that it is necessary to die for the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, or to conquer with the small escort we have, being accompanied by seven soldiers which the mercy of Y. H. has had stationed there since the beginning of your government, who greatly assist in our defence."

(Page 134.)—"With these we maintain and encourage the new settlement of San Ygnacio de Cabruta, against which the persecutions, not only of the Caribs, but of other persons of distinction and quality have been such that were it not for the work of God it would have been ruined from its beginning, as is known to Y. H., under whose shadow and protection it keeps on growing, and it offers much for the defence of the Orinoco should it continue to grow. There are five other subjugations already founded above Cabruta, four or five days' journey, and in winter a longer time—the first, Nuestra Señora de los Angeles de Pararuma, the small fort of San Francisco Javier de Marimaroto, with its town, Santa Theresa de Carichana, all three settlements of the Salibas Nation; San Francisco de Borja, of the Jaruros; San Joseph de Paruate, which is now being founded, and which is of the Mapoye Nation. In all the subjugations the office of prayer and the expounding of the doctrine is performed every day—in the morning in their language and in the afternoon in Spanish, the Missionary Father personally assisting and explaining. On Sundays the eternal truth is preached and the Christian doc-

trine is explained in their language; and on the other principal feasts of the year the Mystery of the day is preached to them.

"In each town there are boys' schools, where all learn to read, and some to write; they learn and are taught elementary singing, and the diversity of harmony, by which means playing on the harp, guitar, violin, and other instruments such as the trumpet and flute, gains much, according as the settlement is new or older. All this is addressed to the divine worship, teaching and police of the Indians, for which purpose there is also a teacher who instructs them in dancing to divert and humor the Indians, and for holidays. On some occasions they are accustomed to represent some scenes on the mysteries of the faith, now in Spanish, now in their own language, in order that all may understand. These children are so advanced that they know the Doctrine in Spanish, with a very clear pronunciation, and it can be seen that they grasp the meaning, because on being questioned they reply in their own language with effect.

"This consoles us greatly, seeing that even the older ones also are advanced in the faith, and that, being married by the Church, they all confess, and many receive the sacrament with devotion. We are afflicted on noting that, without our being able to remedy it, the Caribs endeavor to destroy what with so much labor has been accomplished. Because if the latter are at peace with our converts they solicit them to leave Christianity and flee with them to their lands, as they have already succeeded with many they have taken away. And there are among them apostates, who urge upon them the schism that what we preach to them is a lie. If they are at war they come with arms, and when they do not dare to publicly enter the settlements owing to the escort therein, they introduce themselves secretly into the sown land of the Christian Indians, where they play havoc and capture those they can, as experience has demonstrated on several fatal occasions; and when by this means they do not accomplish their depraved designs, they fire on those they find fishing in the river. Our care is increased by the knowledge that among the subjugated there

are some not so faithful, who in the darkness of night introduce some Caribs, their comrades, into the settlement, and it is the high providence of God that they have not burned us. We have tried all the peaceful means with them, and their peace is not peace, but war; because in any event their intentions are directed towards breaking up Christianity, and the settlements, and to making us return to our lands, as they alone are masters of the Orinoco and of the other nations. Foreign nations encourage their tyrannies by furnishing them arms and munitions in exchange for the captives they take. Finally, this is a point which demands a remedy, which can only be secured by founding in their very lands a strong Spanish settlement which shall frighten off the aliens residing therein for their illicit trade, and quiet the Caribs.

“And I pass on to the third point, which is: ‘In what progress is each of the Reverend Communities now engaged?’ I reply that at the present time we content ourselves with maintaining the six settlements above mentioned, which are managed by five Fathers and one brother coadjutor; and from time to time we make the possible inroads into the heathens, subjugating them to increase the settlements. And not having at this time any workers other than those already expressed, with the escort of twenty-three soldiers which the Catholic zeal of our King (whom God preserve) granted us and maintains, some attachés coming also to us, it is not possible to prudently move forward (although there are plenty of bread-stuffs well located), unless some further measures are taken to pacify the Caribs, who disturb and tyrannize everything; for which reason all the reports that may be requested must end with the Caribs, which are the touchstone.

“Your Honor will see by the letter herein inserted how impossible it is to advance the Missions under present conditions without exposing to ruin those already founded, since to make new subjugations a new escort is necessary for their security. This we have not, save the twenty-three men spoken of, and the Captain (the other twelve men making up the number of thirty-six, which H. M. grants us, are at the Missions of Casanave and Meta), adding the seven soldiers which Y. H. has

detached in the Orinoco Missions. These are all needed to maintain us in the present status; whereby it may be clearly seen that in order to advance it is necessary to add an escort, for under these circumstances it can not be taken from an established settlement, leaving it in danger, to place the force in another which is still in the future.

"This can be easily understood, and it only remains to bring to the notice of Y. H. that these soldiers escorting us (for three years in June of this year) have not received one *real* of the pay allotted them in the Santa Fé Crusade Treasury; and in this same Treasury are also designated the alms which His Majesty gives yearly to each Father, of which we have received nothing during the time mentioned. Wherefrom follows the loss of all the Missions, for the reasons given. Neither can we, the Fathers, subsist without those alms, as we are without funds or revenues. And although I have been informed that the Most Excellent the Viceroy had already commanded that assistance be given us, this will only be to pay part of what is due, and we will remain in the same need, ever in lively struggle, want of succor, and exposed to the loss of the Missions. I put all this before Y. H. that you may support us before the Viceroy, owing to the needs which confront us, although on the part of the Missionary Fathers we are ready and willing to sacrifice our life in the service of both Majesties, in the midst of such a persecution as is that of not giving the soldiers their pay and their leaving us alone in the midst of the enemy. I trust in God that the zeal of Y. H. will bear these Missions in mind to request aid of the Most Excellent the Viceroy, or wherever it may be most advisable.

"It is expedient also that Y. H. should know that even in the event of the Orinoco being closed and the Caribs being tamed, the increase of our escort is necessary for the security of the nations to be settled, until the Indians are well subdued; since advancing up the Orinoco the Caribs will cease to make war upon us, but it will be waged by another nation, very numerous, warlike, barbarous, eaters of human flesh, even more than the Caribs, which is the Guipunaru nation.

"Besides this, the Orinoco communicates with the Negro

river, and the latter with the Marañon, Portuguese lands, through a channel which, at a distance of fifteen days' journey from our Missions up-stream, separates from the Orinoco, as is testified to by two Portuguese who navigated that channel to this river and appeared in our Missions in the year forty. They came in search of people to take to the Marañon; they were lost in the maze of nations, and, luckily, succeeded in reaching our subjugations, in which one still lives and the other died. The consequences that may follow from this communication between the Orinoco and the Marañon may be inferred.

"Lastly, I add that in order to advance our Missions, the first post we must take might be a torrent called "los Aturis," two days' distant from the last upper Orinoco Mission. This is a site which by its nature totally impedes the passage to boats, if an ordinary defence is placed there, because at night it is impossible to pass by water either up or down without falling over a formidable precipice, owing to the madness of the currents rushing between rocks, and whirlpools which swallow up boats even in the daytime. There is only one route, and this presents the same dangers, so that it is necessary to have guides from the same locality to pilot and manage the boat to gain a passage; this is a turbulent channel which precipitates itself against great rocks. At this point there is an islet which provided with the defence of twelve or fourteen men would absolutely close the passage with a key that can not be counterfeited either by day or night. There are great conveniences in closing this strait, for in case the Orinoco here below be fortified, be it either at Angostura, Fajardo Island, or the Limones Channel (which seems the most advisable), the Caribs have left to them the visible roads by land, by means of which they can go up from Esquivo to beyond this torrent of which I speak, where, after having ruined through their cruelties the poor nations they dominate, they take from them their boats, or make them themselves; or on tree-bark, as is their custom, they come down loaded with captives through this same channel, which they must absolutely pass through by day without any choice of route being left them. So that by placing an

ordinary defence on the islet, where there is room for a small settlement, the Caribs are greatly impeded and they lose the hope of bringing down by that route so many captives. It is true that in such case they could return by the same road on land they followed going down; but as the distance is so great, they arrive tired, and the captives they might bring would diminish and escape through the forests. The children become tired out or die on the road, which is very long, and their provisions give out; besides, in such case, they could be pursued by land. This site once fortified would also serve as a defence against some invasion that might be attempted from up the Orinoco, or by other nations, or by some Portuguese.

"All this report I place in the hands of Y. H. with religious sincerity, by which it may be seen that we need an increase of escort of from sixty to seventy men over and above those we have, and that proper pay be designated for the officers; that the back pay of the present escort be liquidated, and such other measures be taken as the high judgment of Y. H. may dictate; that the Missionary Fathers be aided with the usual alms which H. M. commands be given us each year. And having given in answer to the points submitted by Y. H. what I believe before God, what is above set forth is what I feel *salvo meliori*.

"In Guayana, the sixth of March, seventeen hundred and forty-three.

"ROQUE LUBIAN,

"Missionary in the Missions of the Society of  
"Jesus of Orinoco, and Procurator thereof."

---

*Page 140.*—(Next follows an edict of the Governor, relating to the donation of arms by the Commandant Don Francisco Montañez de la Cueva, for the spread and defence of the settlements that may be newly founded; and to the delivery thereof to the military storekeeper of the city of Cumana).

---

On page 142 appears the edict following:

"In the city of Cumana, on the sixth day of May of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, the Governor, Don



Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Brigadier of the Armies of H. M., his Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, said : That he has seen and examined the exemplified copy of the Royal Decree of Approval of H. M., dated in San Ildephonso, on the sixteenth of September, seventeen hundred and thirty-six, relating to the territories of the communities of Missionary Fathers of the Provinces of Cumana and Guayana. The Royal Decree, dated in San Ildephonso, on the fourteenth of October, seventeen hundred and thirty-eight, relating to the suspension of inroads against the Carib Indians owing to the serious injuries and damages arising therefrom. Another, dated in Buen Retiro, on the twenty-first of June, seventeen hundred and thirty-nine, not prohibiting the inroads which the Missionaries should make for the conversion of the Indians through the gentle means of peace. Another exemplified copy of one dated in Aranjuez on the third of May, seventeen hundred and forty-one, relating to the dependencies which the order of the Society of Jesus of the new Kingdom of Granada has on the banks of the Orinoco river, at the instance of Father Diego Terreros, Procurator General of said Missions.

“An original letter, dated in Cartagena on the twenty-eighth of July of seventeen hundred and forty-two, of the Most Excellent Señor Don Sebastian de Eslava, Viceroy of Santa Fé, in which he states his inability to send an engineer, and whatever else appears therein. Another, dated in La Guayra on the fifth of October of seventeen hundred and forty-two, of the Most Excellent Señor Don Gabriel de Zuloaya, to the same effect : of sending an engineer to construct the fort which H. M. has determined on on the Orinoco river. And, lastly, the records relating to the desertion of the three missionaries of the Catalanian Capuchin Fathers of Orinoco, together with all the rest therein recorded and appearing. And that as the said instruments tend to better inform his Honor of the results of this visit, he ordered that this Notary shall file them with the second part of the record made up of the visit to Guayana, in order to submit to H. M. all the points they include, and that the said filing once carried into effect, both records be produced in order to provide and determine what may be advisable in

the premises regarding the report of said visit ; which measure has been delayed owing to the serious illness with which His Honor returned from the Province of Guayana to this city, and to the demands and calls occasioned by the late news of the English war and arming. And therefore His Honor so ordered and signed, to which I certify.

“ ESPINOSA.

“ Before me—

“ DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
“ Royal and Public Notary.”

---

*Page 143.*—EDICT.—“ In the city of Cumana, on the thirteenth day of the month of May of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, Señor Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Brigadier of the Royal Armies, Governor and Captain General of these Provinces for the King our Master, having seen these records relating to the visit he made to the Presidio and Province of Guayana, new subjugations of Indians settled therein by the Reverend Capuchin Fathers from the Principality of Catalonia, assigned to the conversion of Orinoco, and the reconnaissance of this river from its mouth to Angostura, which duty His Honor performed in obedience to general Royal commands, and especially to the Royal Decrees—one dated in Pardo on the ninth of February of seventeen hundred and forty, and the instruction therein ordered to be followed, dated in Madrid on the third of December of seventeen hundred and thirty-nine, relating to the construction of a fort which H. M. has determined shall be built at the most convenient point on the banks of the Orinoco river ; and another, dated in Aranjuez, on the ninth of June of the said year of seventeen hundred and forty, relating to the existence of mines discovered in Guayana, and the assay made by command of H. M. in Spain, his Honor said : That pursuant to all therein contained and to what he personally saw on said visit, he ought to order and did order that as a result thereof, for the increase and maintenance of the conversion, defence of the castle, its greatest security, and the good government of the Province and the Indians

therein subjugated, and who may hereafter be subjugated, the following Articles shall be observed and obeyed, respected and executed: "

(Page 145.)—"1. Firstly, the Commandant, and, under his authority, the Lieutenant of Royal Officers, are charged to assume command, and observe and cause to be observed (in so far as to each attaches) everything provided in this edict relating to the results of the visit, seeing to its punctual execution and observance, in so far as they may of themselves do, and giving a legal account of whatever the provisions or authority of the Superior Government needs to do for the Government of the Province, its inhabitants and missionary towns.

"2. His Honor, the Governor, having recognized in the drill and measurements of firings which were made at the time of the visit, that the greater part of the artillerymen are not expert, as they should be, in the management of the cannon and it not being just that they should receive pay without perfecting themselves in their own drill, there shall be two days' drill each month with the artillery pieces, loading them with stone balls, of which there is an abundance for the purpose on the road of the Missions, locating buoys and targets on the coast opposite the castle, and six shots shall be fired at each drill from the cannon of smallest caliber, for which purpose there are appropriated for the present one hundred pounds of powder, at the expense of the artillerymen themselves, which they should pay for, and which should be deducted from them to the credit of the Royal Treasury from the overplus of the pay they receive as such artillerymen, excepting Carlos Vertelot Santhiago Dupe, Geronimo Chanidin, and Juan Peres de Liendo, who, being experts, ought not to pay for the powder that may be thus used; but all must take part in the said drill and work, respecting which the gunner is charged to make known to each of the artillerymen, one by one, the sighting of each shot, and, finally, he shall inspect it, and, should it be necessary, correct it, and he shall explain and instruct each one who shall be found to be at fault." (It continues on this subject, which is not copied, as it has no bearing on the matter in hand.)

(Page 146.)—"Article 3. Whenever the invasion of an armed enemy is threatened, the militia company should be incorporated with the Royal force (as is provided), excepting such militiamen as are serving as escort in the Mission towns, and, if through omission, any should have neither arms nor ammunition, they shall be immediately provided therewith from the spare stores of the Castle, by delivering to the militia captain the number of muskets and the ammunition that may be necessary, under the condition and obligation to collect them and return them to the arsenal so soon as the invasion shall have been terminated, or to pay the value of whatever may be missing, to which end a receipt will be taken of the delivery whenever made.

"Article 4. And, as in case of alarm, some of the Indians of those settled by the Reverend Missionary Fathers are prone to become stirred up or to rebel, should this occur, and the latter report the same, requesting some reinforcement of Spaniards, they shall be furnished all possible assistance and detachments made up of the infantry and militia, provided, however, that there shall not be absent from the Castle, to insure its defence, seventy expert men of arms, to wit, the fifty inside the fort and the twenty on the hill which serves the Padraastro Fort.

"Article 5. The Commandant-at-Arms will take care, so soon as he has notice of enemies, to place a guard of four men at Puerto Real, under the guns of the Castle, which, through the proper sentinel, shall give warning of any movement, and in the same way uniting the militia with the infantry, he shall station the proper guards in the neighboring ports and anchorages, in order to gain prompt notice of any landing. And he shall also order that all along up the river the same shall be done by the Mission towns, which, on such occasions, are to be divided into guards and ambuscades, the Indians always commanded and directed by Spanish corporals from the infantry or militia garrisoning the Missionary towns—that is to say, in the case of invasion and when the Commandant-at-Arms requests men from the towns, and that the proper guard be placed on the river and on the land. The officers of the Indian towns shall cause the drum to sound and call the town

together, divide the people into three parts—one to remain therein, another to be divided into guards and ambuscades in its own district, and the third part, with two officers of the Indians, should march to the Castle, if called upon, where the Commandant-at-Arms will give them the necessary post, as one having knowledge of the invasion, seeing to it that all the Indians capable of bearing arms shall each, at once, and without the slightest delay, have his quiver with twenty-five arrows, and that any lack there may be of this weapon shall be blamed and charged to the Caciques, Governors, Captains, Sergeants-Major, and other officers of the Indian towns whose Spanish corporals of the escorts (provided that the enemy should be moving in any port or anchorage, or should cross the river by the district of their respective town) shall immediately notify the Castellan of the Royal fort, and if they are unable to write they shall give the said notice to the Missionary Father, whom the Indians call the Captain-Father, whom his Honor exhorts and requires in the name of His Majesty, and begs and requests in his own, to immediately send the notice in writing to the Commandant-at-Arms, in order that he may be in possession of all the proper information for the security of the land and opposition to the enemy, and may meet force with force and prevent the misfortunes and disturbances experienced in the last invasion, and no less in all the preceding ones, in a land by nature defended by the requisite ports, anchorages, and paths or roads by which it is not possible for enemies to introduce themselves unless it be by taking advantage of carelessness and of confusion.”

(Article 6 provides that the arms and munitions shall be in charge of the Commander of the Presidio. The 7th and 8th relate to military drills and reconnaissances along the Limones Channel, the place where the fort is to be constructed, and the 9th, 10th, 11th, and 12th, are instructions regarding the troops, which articles are not pertinent. Article 13 relates to the manner of occupying the lodgings, and the other articles up the 29th, inclusive, are not copied, as they are not pertinent.)

*Page 164.*—“Article 30. As regards measures to aid the infantry serving as escort to the Missions which the Reverend

Fathers of the Society of Jesus have founded and converted on the Orinoco, his Honor has given to the Father Procurator, Roque Lubian, all the necessary assistance, and has offered to approve whatever he may secure in the Provinces of this Colony ; yet, as his purpose in this respect has been based upon the finding of a party with the necessary goods, and the said Father Procurator has not found one, nor is it possible, because the goods consumed in that region are not to be found in these parts, and because the continual trade of the Caribs and Dutch by the Orinoco provides everything clandestinely without it ever being possible to discover the introducers, for, although within a few of months of this time two confiscations were effected, [one of more than one hundred mules and horses, and the other of various goods and clothing, when, failing to apprehend any of the offenders, although the infantry killed one of them at the time of the seizure,] the only thing learned was the fact of the exportation and introduction, without finding the guilty ones.

“And as on several occasions the galleons (although not obliged to) have sent, at the instance of the Governors, and especially of His Honor, goods and merchandise which they have lost on almost entirely, except soups, it is impossible to find in this colony persons to supply so small a demand in so distant a region, for the voyage and the expense are greater than between here and Spain, in which understanding and in that that the pay of the said escorts is in the Kingdom of Santa Fé, the capital of which is forty days distant from the Casanave Missions, at the furthest, the said Missionary settlements of the escorts should provide themselves with the pay assigned them in that Treasury, and with the goods and clothing in the Kingdom of Santa Fé, and they may also do it from what may be found in these Provinces each year when the supercargo is sent for the allowance, as was done during this year by the said Father Procurator Roque Lubian, who was furnished all possible aid by His Honor.

“Article 31. As regards the injuries and damages occasioned by the Caribs in the Missionary towns, together with the rest set forth by the said Father Superior in his letters of June

twenty-third (which has not been found in the Secretary's office of the Government, and whose contents are learned through the copy transmitted by the said Father Procurator, Roque Lubian, in his vote in the Guayana meeting on the sixth of March, of seventeen hundred and forty-three) and twenty-eighth of November, of seventeen hundred and forty-two, and the three Royal Decrees, issued in San Ildephonso on the fourteenth of October, of seventeen hundred and thirty-eight, and in Buen Retiro on the twenty-first of July, of seventeen hundred and thirty-nine—providing that no inroads or war shall be made upon the Carib Indians, and that escorts shall be furnished the Fathers employed on the subjugations, observing the other provisions of the Royal Laws—and the third relating to the Agreement as to territories between the Communities of Reverend Franciscan Fathers of this Province and of the Society of Jesus and Capuchins of Orinoco and Guayana, and prohibiting each from going beyond their respective territories, in conformity with the said Agreement approved by H. M., being worthy of all attention, His Honor commands they be copied, and that letters rogatory be sent, embodying them, to the Reverend Father Superior, Manuel Roman, with the recommendation that he give notice thereof and a copy, if desired, to the Supercargo that may be designated for the Kingdom of Santa Fé, in order that he obey and cause them to be obeyed, carried out, and executed in every respect, complying with the Royal will of H. M., to whose supreme authority, or to the Viceroy, as next in rank and nearer, his Reverence should apply for the increase of the escort which he wishes, so that if agreeable to the Royal will, his Catholic graciousness may grant what he may deem conducive to the service of both Majesties.

“ The Father Superior together with all the Reverend Community should bear in mind that in the present state of war there can not be detached from these Royal forts (to which their respective Castellans have sworn) any men from their small details, as the castles would be totally exposed, and any Governor or Captain General would be subject to punishment who should detach the men without special command of H. M. or

the Viceroy to so distant a region, when in the meantime some of those remaining forces might be attacked and destroyed, without being able to unite with themselves for their defence the detached infantry in each detail, wherefore His Honor directs and requires in the name of H. M. and prays in his own name, and requests the said Father Superior, Manuel Roman, to adhere to the Royal Laws and the Royal Decrees cited, whereby the serious injuries his Reverence anticipates will be avoided, compelling the fisherman and other Mission Indians to fish and sow in their own Districts without trespassing on those of the Caribs, who defend them as if they owned them.

“ Neither the former, nor the Fathers engaged in conquests ought to be permitted, carried away by their warm Catholic zeal, to invade the settlements, fisheries, or shores of the Carib Nation, to be sacrificed, although they may keep themselves in readiness to do so should His Majesty resolve that the subjugation be made by the force of arms, when (without the difficulties that many have exaggerated) the Caribs can be dislodged from Purney and Caura, which, however, should not be attempted without previous special Royal orders to that effect, owing to the serious obstacles now presenting themselves. And let the said Royal orders serve to regulate the request His Reverence made in the letter of June twenty-third of seventeen hundred and forty-two inserted in that of the Father Procurator Roque Lubian.

“ 32. His Honor extends thanks to the Reverend Father Superior and all the Reverend Community for the Apostolic zeal they manifest for the advancement of the conversions, not doubting (since it is publicly notorious) the abundant proofs that up to the present have been secured and are being secured. And in order to encourage the settlement which it is advisable at this time, and which H. M. desires, on the banks of the Orinoco, his Honor has reinforced the Missionary Communities of the Reverend Franciscan and Capuchin Fathers, so that they give return, as they are doing, by endeavoring to advance some settlements that shall go on connecting communications in order to accomplish so advisable a



consummation as that of dislodging the said Caribs from Purney and Caura, occupying their land with the forces, and insure, through the settlements, free communication with the Kingdom of Santa Fé. And for the indispensable fortification which H. M. has resolved shall be constructed on the Orinoco, the proper steps having been taken by his Honor with the assistance of Father Roque Lubian and of the oldest Fathers of the said Missionary Communities, and the oldest and most expert guides of the Orinoco, and of the said lands held by the Caribs, all the locations of said Missions will be reported to H. M. that he may determine whatever may seem best to His Royal pleasure."

*Page 166, reverse.*—"33. His Honor, in the name of H. M. extends thanks to the Reverend Father Commissary and members of the Advisory Board for the opportune selection of Friar Diego Francisco Ybañez, and the reports which his Apostolic experience and zeal rendered in the meeting held in Guayana on the eighth of March of this year, worthy of the greatest attention so as to arrive at a full understanding.

"34. And as regards the resettlement of the Mamo site, it can not be attempted; nor is it advisable at this time, since, by the Royal Decree approving the Agreement, dated in San Ildephonso, on the sixteenth of September of seventeen hundred and thirty-six, while the Reverend Community of Franciscan Fathers understand that said District belongs to them, the Reverend Community of the Catalanian Capuchin Fathers of Orinoco and Caroni river object, and claim it belongs to them, and the Fathers of the Society of Jesus claim that the site of Cabruta is within their boundaries. So that if these disagreements continue they will be considered, and H. M. will determine whatever may best accord with his Royal pleasure and service.

"35. His Honor agrees that for the present the Community of Reverend Fathers of Piritu shall engage itself, and continue its Apostolic zeal, in bringing about and founding on the most adaptable site a Spanish city near the mouth of the Pao river, and in its neighborhood one or two more Indian settlements, which settlements will be progressively connected with the

older ones, advancing towards the settlement which it is now advisable to have on the banks of the great Orinoco river, the highway and free communication of the Kingdom of Santa Fé. Looking also (whenever H. M. may so determine) to the dislodging of the Caribs from Purbey and Caura, and to the settling of those lands, by which means the whole of the Orinoco (excepting its mouths, which the strength of the Caribs occupy) will be tranquilized. To which end the Community of Reverend Missionary Fathers of the Society of Jesus, although with fewer evangelical workers, are notoriously contributing through their incessant labors and the advancement of their subjugations. And no less, the constancy of the Reverend Community of the Capuchin Fathers, which is at present engaged on the new settlement of Panacayos, ten leagues beyond the town of Divina Pastora, where it has its cattle herd, and very near the lands of the Caribs, in the neighborhood of the highway which leads from the latter to the Dutch Colonies. So that if the permanence of this settlement is secured (as we trust from the Apostolic zeal with which the Reverend Communities of Jesuit and Franciscan Fathers will make return, each in its own district) it will be, without doubt, a protecting wall and intermediary point which will facilitate the entry and conquest of the aforesaid lands of the Caribs of Purvey and Caura whenever H. M. may so determine; this conquest not being expedient until after H. M., being informed of what is advisable, shall issue the Royal command best meeting his pleasure and service.

“36. And as regards the settlement the said Reverend Franciscan Fathers purpose founding near Unare, on the Palma site, a settlement of only a few Indian families in several small bands, and of others, fugitives from the settlements, now living in the forest, his Honor does not agree to it at present until he is better informed, because by erecting a settlement or church in that locality it is thought that the natives of Piritu and Clarines, San Pablo and San Lorenzo assisting therein, and who contribute to the Royal Crown, will no longer settle in their towns, nor recognize the obligations of vicinage and contribution therein; and that should the case arise of retaking

with their aid the runaway slaves of Socorio to settle them in the said Palma, the former will only settle with them, and will claim exemption from the payment of tribute as a newly subjugated settlement, which fact will work to the injury of the Royal Treasury, which his Honor prohibits and can not authorize. This is corroborated more by the infallible consequence that the said four settlements and others of the Piritu Missions, the natives of which must relish liberty and will flock to the proposed settlement of Palma, will go on decreasing, and the said settlements being the largest situated on the coast, and which defend the ports of the jurisdiction, ordinarily affording anchorage to piratical and trading vessels, they should not be permitted to go far from their vicinity; to which is added the common benefit afforded the Province of Barcelona by the preservation and increase of the said old settlements. It is not doubted that the Reverend Fathers and Community will bear in mind not to do anything that may destroy the vigilance and labors of the said Apostolic Missionaries, the incessant expense and labors with which the city of Barcelona and its inhabitants have given and are giving in return for the conquest thereof; and for their preservation and defence, the heavy expenses up to the present occasioned the Royal Treasury not being the least consideration—all circumstances which co-operate for the importance and preservation of the Missionary towns.

“37. And as regards the other settlements of Spanish cities and Indian towns set forth in his opinion by the Reverend Father Friar Diego Francisco Ybañez at the meeting held in Guayana on the eighth of March of seventeen hundred and forty-three, it appears worthy of the highest approval, to be followed as a plan and fixed idea, pursuant to which the conversions may be advanced progressively by founding some, in order that these may facilitate and encourage, according to the circumstances of the time, the founding of new ones, watching events, and advancing the settlements, that the strength, means, and number of Apostolic workers may permit. It is true that through the means proposed by his Reverence, the Reverend Communities of the Jesuit and Catalonian Capuchin

Fathers assisting within their own district (which ought not to be doubted), and the fort which H. M. has decided to build on the mainland, at the mouth of the Limones channel, being constructed (should H. M. so determine), the desired object of occupying the Purney and Caura lands will be achieved. These lands can now, or at any time, be cleared of Indians; but to retain them, both Missions should first make the subjugations of Indians and the necessary settlements, and subsequently secure the desired end of uniting these Provinces with the Kingdom of Santa Fé by free communication on the Orinoco, when its banks shall have been settled, and the other end of pacifying the diversity of docile Indians, which (excepting the Caribs) are considered easy to quiet and settle. Acting otherwise, any attempt to antagonize the said Caribs of Purvey and Caura by dislodging them and burning their towns and fields (no doubt existing as to the accomplishment thereof), as the troops undertaking the task should return to their Royal forts when the action is ended, the respective cities would be immediately exposed to become the sacrifice of the vengeance of the Caribs, and all the settlements of both Missions and the Reverend Communities of the Missionary Fathers to lose a part or all of what they have acquired.

"And in case the Reverend Advisory Board and Community of Franciscan Missionary Fathers have in view advancing some settlements at the present time, they will name priests or deputy priests who, appearing in this city with the necessary credentials, will confer with his Honor the Governor and agree upon whatever it may be determined to carry out, to which end his Honor will furnish all possible assistance.

"38. The Reverend Father Commissary will transmit at once to this Superior Government a succinct statement giving each priest, the place where each of the thirty-nine evangelical workers lately arrived from Spain is employed, specifying those serving in parishes, in schools, and those who are acting as coadjutors in each.

"And as his Honor has been informed extrajudicially that permission has been given to some of the lately-arrived Missionaries to absent themselves, or that their absence has been

quietly tolerated (to which no credit has been given as the Superior Government entrusted to his Honor lacks legal notice thereof), and as this would be an abuse meriting the greatest attention and remedy, his Honor hopes that the Reverend Father Commissary, at this time or heretofore acting, has not and will not hereafter grant any such permission without previous reports and consent of the Superior Government, as is provided in the Royal laws; for otherwise he will incur the Royal displeasure, and the Reverend Advisory Board can not fail to understand that if abuses are committed his Honor will be compelled to use the remedies the said Royal provisions may dictate.

“For, comparing the Royal provisions treating of such permits and the heavy cost and great zeal of the Royal Catholic piety with the waste of granting immediate leave to the said workers under a variety of pretexts, would be frustrate and render illusionary the end to which His Majesty has destined them, contravening the Royal laws and provisions and directly violating the will of the King.

“39. And in order that the said Royal provisions and ordinances, which include four Royal Decrees, shall be duly obeyed, his Honor orders that there be transmitted to the Reverend Father Commissary of the Piritu Missions exemplified copies thereof, to wit: The first, given in San Ildephonso on the fourteenth of October, of seventeen hundred and thirty-eight; the second, in Buen Retiro, on the twenty-first of June, seventeen hundred and thirty-nine, providing that no invasions or war be made on the Carib Indians. The third, issued in Aranjuez on the third of May, of seventeen hundred and forty-one, regarding the dependencies which the Reverend Fathers of the Society of Jesus of the New Kingdom of Granada have of the Missionary settlements on the banks of the Orinoco river, in order that, informed of these Royal resolutions, they may continue (as they are doing) to carry out the Royal Will of H. M. And the fourth, relating to the Agreement as to the territories of the Communities of Reverend Franciscan Fathers of this Province, and the Jesuits and Capuchins on the Orinoco in Guayana, so that none of them

shall go beyond or make any change in their respective territories, obeying the Agreement cited, approved by H. M., in which connection his Honor orders that (inserting everything provided for the Reverend Franciscan Missionary Fathers in this edict on the results of the visit, and the said four Royal Decrees), letters rogatory be sent to the Reverend Father Commissary demanding, on the part of H. M., and requesting and praying on his own, that he proceed to carry them out, and that the letters be delivered to the Father Procurator, Friar Alonzo Rubio, that he may place them in the hands of his Prelate.

" 40. Thanks are extended in the name of H. M. to the Very Reverend Father Prefect, Friar Augustin de Olot, and the Assistant Judges of his seigniority for the skill with which he has proceeded with a Reverend Community, to the spread of the settlements of regenerate Indians, for the good education thereof, and for the fair condition in which his Honor has found the settlements, praying them to continue their ardent zeal as they have up to the present, notably the said Reverend Father Prefect, Father Friar Benito de Moya, and Friar Thomas de Santa Eugenia, founders of those Missions. In the same way his Honor in the name of H. M. requests and prays that they advance the new settlement of the Panacayo nation, and, as it is an outer defence for the Missions, and so far from the other settlements that it requires a two days' journey, it would be well for its Reverend Fathers to facilitate the founding of one or two more settlements in the distance between those already founded and the Panacayos, or induce the latter (as his Honor conferred and agreed with the Reverend Father Prefect), to move their settlement as near as possible to the older Missionary settlements, to the end and effect that they may be aided during invasions, and to secure, as is advisable, that outer protection; and, settling further on, in time, the highway travelled by the Caribs of Purvey and Caura to reach the Dutch Colonies over said lands, can be cut off; in view of the fact that closing the Orinoco with the fortifying of the Limones Channel it will be of the greatest importance to cut off the said land highway which, although long, they travel.

“ And then it may be expected that the Caribs of Purvey and Caura, being thus entirely prevented from communicating with those at the mouths of the Orinoco, the former will withdraw and abandon the lands, which may then be settled by the Reverend Franciscan Friars, to whom it seems they belong pursuant to the Agreement approved by H. M.; and in the meantime his Honor orders that there be sent to the said Reverend Father Prefect and Assistant Judges, exemplified copies of the four Royal Decrees, the first given in San Ildephonso, on the fourteenth of October, seventeen hundred and thirty-eight; the second in Buen Retiro, on the twenty-first of June, seventeen hundred and thirty-nine, providing that no invasions or war be made upon the Carib Indians. The third, issued in Aranjuez, on the third of May, seventeen hundred and forty-one, regarding the dependency which the Reverend Fathers of the Society of Jesus of the New Kingdom of Granada have on the banks of the Orinoco river, so that informed of these Royal resolutions they shall continue (as they are now doing) to carry out the Royal will of H. M.; and the fourth, relating to the Agreement as to territories between the Communities of Reverend Franciscan Fathers, Missionaries of this Province and the Jesuits and Capuchins on the Orinoco in Guayana, so that both shall not go beyond or make any change within their respective territories, carrying out the Agreement cited, approved by H. M.

“ 41. Letters rogatory shall also be sent, in the name of H. M. (requesting that he make them known and furnish a copy thereof, if required, to the Lieutenant of Royal Officers), to the Reverend Prefect, requesting and praying him for the necessary work on the castle and fortifications of Guayana, quarters for the garrison, and houses for the residents, to furnish the Indians from the Missionary towns to serve as the necessary laborers, to which end there have been added to the tariff rates the amounts which, for the present, it appears just should be paid for each day's work. And that at times of invasions, and other matters concerning the Royal service and the maintenance of these fortifications, the Reverend Fathers co-operate in order that all the Caciques, Governors, officers of

the Indian settlements and militiamen obey the orders of the the Captain and Castellan or Commander of Guayana, furnish at their call armed men, and also provide the food-supplies that may be requested in the necessary cases, which will be paid for with preferences from the allowances, provided the delivery of such supplies is evidenced by the receipt of the Lieutenant of Royal Officers and, in the absence thereof, of the party empowered to provide supplies.

“And that, likewise, the officers and soldiers going to the Mission towns by order of the Commandant, or on leave, be prohibited from trading with the Indians, to provide themselves with all the necessaries for their maintenance, without compelling them for the purpose to be locked up in the Curate’s or in the Government house on supposititious grounds, out of which have grown many complaints and inconveniences, especially since it is advisable that there should be communication between the Spaniards and the Indians, by which means that which is so desirable, and friendship between both, is facilitated. And in order to remove all apprehension on such occasions, the soldiers may be accompanied by an Indian officer, and whenever one of the latter may feel himself offended he shall resort to the Commandant at Arms, who shall apply speedy remedy and act with proper justification, failing to do which, and not reporting to his Honor, the latter will take the steps he may deem advisable ; it being by no means regular, through surreptitious and artful apprehensions, to render impossible and prevent the maintenance of a garrison locked up in a castle, when the settlements the letter defends abound in all kind of edibles and the tariff and prices established, which are published, are so well considered that the major part thereof exceed the prices at which the Indians usually sell or barter ; but it should not be permitted or tolerated in any way that, through locking up those who go to seek their necessaries, any raise or change in prices shall ensue, and, in consequence the impossibility of the said garrison providing itself. And it being the case that this does not occur in all the settlements, it should be remedied wherever the abuse is practiced, and the Commandant at Arms shall remedy any abuse,



in the understanding that if he fails so to do he will incur a serious charge.

"42. Experience having shown that some of the Fathers of Mission towns refuse to allow the Indians to furnish the indispensable guides from one settlement to another at times when the Commandant at Arms sends letters or orders relating to the Royal service, or the distribution or execution of those he receives from the Superior Government; by reason of which many, or the greater part, have not been properly executed as the carriers of the orders, being ignorant of the paths and roads, get astray and are lost, and consequently the purposes of any order or provision are frustrated, therefore his Honor orders: That the Cacique, Governor, Major, Captain, or officer of any of said Indian towns, who may be called upon by the officer or party travelling with orders from the Castellán or Commandant at Arms to furnish him with a guide at any hour of the day or night, shall furnish the same at once, not permitting that the orders shall be frustrated, detained, or suffer the slightest delay, under penalty of two years' imprisonment on short allowance and without pay in the castle of Guayana for every one acting in violation hereof. The furnishing of such guides in the necessary cases being at the expense of the towns themselves, without claiming any pay therefor, since the garrison which protects the Royal fort and all the land has only to do with the defence thereof, and this, or the Royal Treasury, ought not to be taxed with the unnecessary expense of such guides, especially when the Indians themselves do not object to serving; and owing to the necessity that orders shall be forwarded and executed, we pray and request each and all of the Mission Fathers to order, assist, and not prevent, the Indian officers from furnishing the said guides on the necessary occasions, thus aiding the Royal service.

"43. And considering that the Reverend Father Prefect has designated a Chaplain and his appointment has been made, his Honor trusts that hereafter there will be no lack of spiritual nourishment for the garrison and city of Guayana, to which end, his Honor having conferred with the Vicar Superintendent

of these dependencies, Don Phelipe Martinez, he has consented to give permission *ad interim* to the person appointed by this Government and designated by the Rev. Father Prefect, while administering the holy Sacraments to the garrison, to also serve as Rector for the vicinage, that there may be no lack of sacraments, sepulture, and suffrage for the dead."

Page 178.—"44. (Commission for the allotment of lands and building lots.)

"And considering that by Royal law number one, Title 12, Book 4, of the new abridgment of these Indias, it is declared to be the Royal will that there may be and be allotted houses, building lots, and lands to such as may go to settle new lands in the towns and places which by the Government of the new settlement may be designated, and in obedience thereto, that founded at the Presidio of Guayana after the invasion being in fact a new settlement, because the one previously existing there was destroyed by fire during the invasion, it has been thought more advisable for its safety and durability to place it within cannon-shot of the castle where it now is, the necessary orders to that end were issued. And in Article 13 of this edict it is ordered that there be allotted to its inhabitants, lots for houses, and lands for their fields, leaving, as is the custom, the pastures and water rights in common, without prejudice to any other lots and lands which (pursuant to the Royal orders) may have been distributed. And in order that said allotment may be made his Honor entrusts it to the Lieutenant of Royal Officers of the said Presidio, whom he commissions and fully empowers thereunto; and he orders that in the exercise of this authority he shall append the allotments he may make at the end of the exemplified copy of this edict which it is ordered be transmitted and published in said Presidio so that the right of the settlers to said lots and lands allotted may always be of record, which settlers, provided they resort to this Tribunal of Government after the expiration of the four years demanded by law subsequent to the entering into possession of the new settlement, will be furnished the necessary deed in fee.

(Bottom)—"45. And, lastly, his Honor orders that after the

transmitting of the letters rogatory to the Reverend Fathers Superior of the Communities of Missionaries of the Society of Jesus, Franciscans, and Catalanian Capuchins of the Orinoco, the proper dispatches be sent to the Governor of the castle and Province of Guayana, and the Lieutenant of Royal Officers, inserting this edict on the results of the visits, in order that, filing the same with the books and papers of the Royal Auditor's office they may serve them for the present as a guide for their information and obedience in so far as to each attaches, and that they return evidence of their receipt and of the publication of the rates of the tariff. And that, likewise, a full exemplified copy be made of this edict and be sent to the officials of the Royal Treasury in order that they may comply therewith in every respect and cause the same to be obeyed and executed until such a time as H. M., in view of the visit and the provisions of its results, shall determine whatever may best meet his Royal pleasure and service with respect to the former, and the building of the fort and other dependencies mentioned therein. Wherefore, his Honor, as the results of his visit, so provided, ordered, and signed; to which I certify.

" DON GREGORIO DE ESPINOSA.

" Before me—

" DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
" Royal and Public Notary."

---

*Page 179.*—"In the city of Cumana, on the twenty-fourth day of the month of May, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, before me, the scrivener in the Secretary's office of the Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, the Reverend Father Friar Alonso Rubio, of the order of St. Francis, Procurator General of the conversion of Indians and Mission schools of Piritu, received from my hands the letters rogatory which by the foregoing edict were ordered to issue for his Prelate, the Very Reverend Father Commissary of Piritu, which I delivered to the said Father Procurator, covering eighteen written leaves, who, in testimony of their actual

delivery and of his assuming charge of the said letters rogatory, signed this; to which I certify.

"FRIAR ALONZO RUBIO.

"Before me—

"DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
"Royal and Public Notary."

---

"On the fifteenth of June of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, I issued an exemplified copy of the preceding edict on the results of the visit to the Province of Guayana, to the officials of the Royal Treasury of this Province, covering forty written leaves, who received the same, and in testimony thereof they signed this; to which I certify.

"MARTINEZ.

"DE URBANEJA.

"DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
"Royal and Public Notary."

---

"In the city of Cumana, on the twenty-second day of the month of June of seventeen hundred and forty-three, his Honor, the said Governor and Captain General, said: That whereas he is sending an expedition to the Presidio of Guayana, which he is getting in readiness for the twenty-sixth instant, and as one Joseph de Pro Gonzalez, a soldier from said Presidio, goes therewith, and he, this expedition going by land, having to pass by the new settlement of Aragua, whence there is trade and road to Cabruta, the settlement where the Reverend Father Bernardo Botella of the Society of Jesus is stationed, therefore his Honor orders that the letters rogatory, which in the edict on the results of the visit it was provided should be sent to the Reverend Father Superior of the Jesuit missionaries of Orinoco, through the Supercargo of the Presidio of Guayana, and considering that the said letters are already issued, and the delay in the leaving of the said Super-

cargo—which can not take effect until February of next year—be taken by the said Pro Gonzalez to the Lieutenant of the said settlement of Aragua, in order that the latter shall transmit it closed and sealed, by mail carrier, to the said settlement of Cabruta to be delivered to the said Father Botella, whose receipt he shall return, and by whom (Gonzalez) shall also be sent the despatches intended for the Reverend Father Prefect of the Capuchins of Guayana, praying and requesting him to observe, in so far as attaches to his office, what is ordered in the said edict on the results of the visit, and for the Captain Castellan, and Lieutenant of Royal Officers of the said Presidio, inserting the said edict; and by this he so ordered and signed, to which I certify.

“ ESPINOSA.

“ Before me—

“ DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
“ Scrivener of the Governor's Office.”

“ NOTE.—By Rufino Diaz, a soldier of the Presidio of Guayana, were transmitted the despatches ordered to be sent by the edict on the results of the visit to the Commandant and Lieutenant of Royal Officers of the Presidio of Guayana, and to the Reverend Father Superior of the Jesuits of Orinoco, being delivered to him in Cumana on the twenty-ninth of June of seventeen hundred and forty-three. And also the rogatory letters to the Reverend Father Prefect of the Capuchins of Guayana. The said Rufino goes with Joseph de Pro Gonzalez.

“ ALCALA, Notary.”

---

*Page 181—*(Reply of the Father Commissary of Piritu to the letters rogatory.)

“ Friar Salvador Romero, of the regular order of Our Father St. Francis, Preacher General, Curate, Teacher of the town of La Purísima Concepción de Piritu and San Antonio de Clarines, and Commissary of these Missions and schools, says: That in view of the letters rogatory from the Governor and Captain General of this Province of Cumana, dated on the

twenty-fourth of May of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, of which we have been apprised, and which are of the tenor following :

“ ‘ I, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Brigadier of the armies of H. M., his Governor and Captain General of these Provinces of Nueva Audalucia, Nueva Barcelona, and Guayana, their coasts and Presidios, for the King our Master, etc., make known to the Very Reverend Father Friar Salvador Romero, of the regular order of St. Francis, Curate by the Royal patronage of the pure and clean Concepción de Piritu and San Antonio de Clarines, and Minister Commissary of the Venerable Community of the other schools and conversions of the said order in this Province, that in view of the records made up of the visit to the Province of Guayana and the Orinoco River, and of what I personally saw, I have issued, as a result of said visit, an edict, whose heading, foot, and the articles therein referring to the Reverend Father Commissary, his community, conversion, and the Royal Decrees relating thereto, all chronologically set forth, are verbatim of the tenor following : ’ ” (Page 182.)

(The heading of the edict and Articles 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, and 45, or the foot of the edict, are not copied, so as to avoid repetitions.)

**Copies of the Royal Decrees cited in the Edict.**

*First Royal Decree—(Page 189.)*

“ The King. To the Governor and Captain General of the Province of Cumana :

“ In a letter of the twenty-ninth of July of the year seventeen hundred and thirty-seven Friar Miguel de Marchena, Procurator General of the Missions of the Province of Guayana, includes another from Friar Angel de Olot, in which they represent, among other things, the great affliction and pain the missionaries suffer through the serious injuries and damages they experience by reason of the continuous invasions of the Carib Indians, and much more because of the repeated invasions you have made with armed men against

the said Indians, neighbors of the Missionaries, with whom they have maintained peace, by treating them with affection. And the Missionaries, fearing that by such invasions the said Indians will fall upon the towns given up to the Mission and destroy them and take life (the said Friar Angel de Olot, adding that two priests of the same order, named Friar Joseph de Zeron and Friar Miguel de Mataro, having landed at the port of Cumana at the time when the epidemic of black vomit was raging, there being a great lack and need of Ministers to give spiritual and temporal aid to those suffering from the malady, felt themselves called upon, under such urgent circumstances, to nurse them for the period of four days, and they died of the same disease, amid general sorrow for such fervent men, who gave an example by their death to all the residents of that settlement), for which reason he asks that measures be taken.

"And having been considered in my Council of the Indias, together with the opinion of my Attorney General, it has been found that by law nine, title four, book three, of the Abridgment I am advised that war can not and must not be made on the Indians of any Province, so that they may not resist the holy Catholic faith, but give obedience; it being also provided by law ten of the same title and book that no Governor, Lieutenant, or ordinary Alcalde can send armed men against the Indians to subjugate them, or under any other pretext whatever, under pain of loss of office and a fine of two thousand *pesos* for my Royal Chamber, wherefore I have resolved to command you (as I do), that pursuant to the said Royal laws, you abstain from and do not execute any invasion against the said Carib Indians in the neighborhood of the said Mission, especially when they are not the cause of the deaths, robberies, hostilities, or any act which should precede war; in which latter case it is provided that war should be made upon them with notice to the said Council; and not having given it of the war you made on the said Indians, I warn you in order that, as I command, you abide in everything by the said laws, and that for no reason you violate them, this being advisable for the tranquility of the Indians subject to our

holy faith; and your full understanding hereof, for its observance, you will report to me at the first opportunity.

“Done at San Ildephonso on the fourteenth of October, seventeen hundred and thirty-eight. I, the King. By command of the King our Master, Don Miguel de Villanueva. And at the foot of the said Royal Decree there are three flourishes indicating signatures which appear to be those of the Señores of the Royal and Supreme Council of these Indias.”

*Second Royal Decree—(Page 191).*

“The King. My Governor and Captain General of the Province of Cumana.

“Friar Francisco del Castillo, of the order of St. Francis, Procurator General and Missionary of the new conversions of Piritu Indians, and other nations of that Province, has represented to me that at the instance of the Procurator General of the order of the Capuchins of the Missions of the Province of Guayana, I was pleased to command you by decree of October fourteenth, of seventeen hundred and thirty-eight, to omit invasions of the forests against the Caribs, owing to the great inconveniences and ill consequences which would result to the said Missions under their charge; and that as the expression ‘make no invasions’ may work to the prejudice of the settlements under the care of the Capuchins, it may bring worse results to my Royal service and the missionaries of St. Francis, as they have there under their charge three new Mission towns of Carib Indians, which nation is so captious and audacious that with this pretext instead of increasing the number of souls in the said towns, they will diminish or be wholly lost, returning to their unbelief, he prays me to be pleased to declare that the expression ‘invasions’ be understood as meaning that the Governors can not make them to punish or make war on them, but that the evangelical missionaries may go in to subjugate and settle them in the customary manner, the said invasions being ordered by the Jesuit, Capuchin, and Franciscan missionaries; for they only address themselves to God’s and my service.



"And this petition having been considered by my Council of the Indias, with the opinion of the Attorney General, and it being borne in mind that in the said Decree of the fourteenth of October, of seventeen hundred and thirty-eight, I commanded you to abstain from and not execute any invasion whatever against the said Carib Indians, pursuant to the provisions of law nine, title four, book three, of the Abridgment, and law ten of the same title and book, which prohibited any war being waged against the Indians of any Province, so that they may thus receive the holy faith, save when they execute hostilities, when it is provided war shall be made upon them by giving notice to my Council, it has been considered well to now declare (as by these presents I do in order to remove any doubt that may arise in the premises), that what is provided in said laws only prohibits warlike invasions with armed men against the Indians, to subdue them ; but does not prohibit the invasions the missionaries should make in the customary manner for the subjugation and conversion of the heathens to the holy Catholic faith, attracting them thereto by the gentle means of peace, which I have wished to say to you in order that you may so understand in any cases that may arise.

"Done at Buen Retiro, on the twenty-first of June, of seventeen hundred and thirty-nine. I, the King. By command of the King our Master, Don Francisco Campo de Yrbe. And at the bottom of this Royal Decree are three flourishes, indicating signatures which appear to be those of the Señores of the Royal and Supreme Council of these Indias."

*Third Royal Decree.*

"The King. Brigadier Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Governor and Captain General of the city of Cuzco :

"Diego Terreros, of the Society of Jesus, Procurator-General of the Province of the New Kingdom of Granada, has represented that by my Royal Decrees of the seventeenth of February, of the year sixteen hundred and eighty-three ; October first, of sixteen hundred and ninety-two ; February first, of ninety-three, and tenth of May, seventeen hundred and sixteen, are

declared my Royal will and most ardent desire for the spread of the Catholic faith on the banks of the Orinoco and its vicinity, through the provisions therein contained aiming at the advancement of the Missions that your said Province has under within it, situated in the neighborhood of the said river. That his sect can not efficaciously co-operate in the accomplishment of my pious desire because of the non-observance of the provisions of two of the said Decrees—of the tenth of May of the year seventeen hundred and sixteen, in which I commanded the furnishing of an escort of thirty-six soldiers for the safety of their missionaries, and, if necessary, the addition of more thereto, and that to each priest engaged in the said Missions there be paid, for his maintenance, two hundred *pesos* a year in the goods I designated, the case being that although in his said Province (outside the Orinoco) he has the districts of Casanabe and the Meta river, for which seventy soldiers are needed, there are not in the whole three districts thirty-six, wherefore it is impossible to advance the conquest, nor can the Jesuits live in said districts without being exposed to the evident risk of their lives and to the destruction of the Missions, as has happened on several occasions. And he adds that although his said Province has ten priests engaged in these Missions he has not succeeded in having the said stipend of two hundred *pesos* a year paid to more than eight of them.

“For which reason, and because there is considerable delay in the payment of the stipend as well as of the salary of the soldiers, although their pay is placed in the alms in the Bull of the Holy Crusade of the districts of the city of Tunjar and Llanos, and it is ordered that in case this be insufficient to pay all, the same be paid from the demurrages and duties of the Mayor’s office of Llanos and Chita, and if these be insufficient it be done from my Royal *novenos* of Santa Fé, which has not been done, there springing from this non-observance of my Royal intention the said injury to the Missions, and the inability to secure the desired fruit from the conversion of that extensive heathenism—the said Procurator, Diego Terremos, prayed me to command a repetition of the said Decrees, relating to the pay of the soldiers that may be necessary, and

that, adding twelve to the thirty-three designated, they be paid by the said branches of my Royal Treasury, whereby they should be paid promptly, as also the two hundred *pesos* a year to each of the missionaries, without the reduction to eight made by the officials in Santa Fé, whenever it may appear by certificate of the Governor of the District and Superior of the Missions that they are laboring in the conversion of the heathens. And, also, that wealthy men of all the Provinces near the said river be urged to found colonies on the banks thereof, offering them the honors and premiums that may be deemed proper, owing to the great expediency of this measure for the easier and briefer subjugation of the Indians.

"And having been considered in my Council of the Indias, together with the opinion of my Attorney General, bearing in mind the Decrees cited, and that by another of the twenty-third of February of the year seventeen hundred and thirty, I commanded the then President of the *Audiencia* of Santa Fé, and the Royal Officials of that Treasury, that they see to it that with the intervention of the Commissary, Subdelegate of Crusade of that city, there be paid the salaries of the soldiers stationed at these Missions, as well as that which in the way of subsistence was designated to each of the missionaries from the alms of the Bull of the Districts nearest these Missions; and that by an exemplified copy which this party has presented the necessity appears of adding twelve soldiers for the security of the missionaries, as in fact, Don Rafael de Eslava, being President of the *Audiencia*, in the year seventeen hundred and thirty-three, ordered be done, I have commanded that the said Procurator Diego Terreros apply to my Viceroy of the said New Kingdom of Granada in order that as regards the payment of the salaries of the soldiers and missionaries, as well as the increase of the latter and the soldiers for the safety of said Mission, he obey and carry out what was commanded by my above-cited Royal Decrees.

"And I have likewise resolved to command my said Viceroy (after informing himself of all these facts) to report to me whatever occurs to him, not only with respect to the matter of the progress of these Missions and the increase of workers men-

tioned, but also with regard to the number of soldiers that for the better safety and defence of said Missions ought to be added ; and that in case he deems it convenient to have colonies founded on the banks of the Orinoco, he give his attention and care to that end, informing persons assisting in its accomplishment that they will be granted all those honors and rewards customarily granted to settlers, mentioned in title six, book six, of the Abridgment, according to the merit of each.

“ By reason of all of which I have resolved to advise you in order that, informing yourself of the condition of these Missions and their situation, you report to me (as I command you) whatever may occur to you in regard to the matter of their progress and the increase of workers and soldiers requested for their greater security ; and that if you consider it advisable to found colonies on the banks of the said Orinoco river, you attentively and carefully see to it that persons of means undertake the task, informing them that they will be given the rewards granted to settlers, as provided by law, in proportion to the merits of each, and you will do so, reporting the results to me at the first opportunity.

Aranjuez, on the third of May of seventeen hundred and forty-one. I, the King. By command of the King our Master, Don Miguel de Villanueva. And at the bottom of this Royal Decree appear three flourishes indicating signatures, which appear to be those of the Señores of the Royal and Supreme Council.”

*Fourth Royal Decree.*

“ The King. Whereas Friar Francisco del Castillo, of the order of St. Francis, prior and Apostolic Missionary of the new conversions of Piritu, Palenque, Guarive, Cumanogoto, and Carib Indians, and other heathens of the Province of Cumana, has represented to me that there was concluded and executed in the city of Santa Thomé de la Guayana, on the twentieth of March of seventeen hundred and thirty-four, an agreement by the missionaries of the said order of St. Francis, the Jesuits and Capuchins residing in the Missions and conversions on the banks of the Orinoco river, with the intervention

of Don Carlos Sucre, my Governor of the said Province of Cumana, through which agreement, setting forth that the said holy men of the order of St. Francis had subjugated by the fervor and zeal of their preaching a great number of Indians, and formed with them twenty-two settlements, including the religious schools, on this bank of the Orinoco river, where they entered to exercise their Apostolic purpose pursuant to my Royal license, and there not remaining there any more Indians to convert, wishing to satisfy their indefatigable desire, the said missionaries stipulated and agreed with the Capuchins and Jesuits to allow them to preach and spread the Holy Gospel on the other side of the said river, designating among each other the locality where they were, without confusion, to practice their holy calling; and in order that what was agreed upon by and between the said three sects may be perpetually firm and binding, he requested me to be pleased to confirm in every respect the said agreement, the tenor of which is as follows:”

*Agreement. (Page 198.)*

“‘In the city of Santa Thomé de la Guayana, on the twentieth day of the month of March of the year seventeen hundred and thirty-four, Colonel Don Carlos Sucre, Governor and Captain General of these Provinces and that of Dorado, and the others discovered and to be discovered on the Orinoco river, of Nueva Andalucia, Nueva Barcelona, their coasts and Presidios for the King our Master, summoned and brought together in this Government house, residence of his Honor, the Reverend Father Joseph Gumilla, of the Venerable Society of Jesus, Superior of the Jesuit Missions of this Orinoco; the Very Reverend Father Friar Agustin de Olot, Prefect of the Capuchin Mission, situate on the said Orinoco; the Reverend Father Friar Thomas de Santa Eugenia, Friar Antonio de Vargas, and Friar Benito de Moya, of the said holy order of Capuchin Apostolic missionaries; the Very Reverend Father Friar Francisco de las Llagas, of the regular order of our Father Saint Francis, and President of the Mission of the missionaries of Piritu, and the Rev. Fathers Friar Francisco

Rodriguez de Ledesma, Friar Mathias Garcia, Friar Lorenzo Algaba, and Friar Bernardo Camacho, of the regular order, and Apostolic missionaries of the conversions of Piritu.

"And their Reverencies being met and congregated together, his Honor proposed and said to them: That being about to cross over to this Province from that of Cumana, not only because of the news of the disturbance of the peace committed by the Carib Nation to the great spiritual ruin of the converted Indians and desecration of the temples, but in the execution of some Royal commands, and being informed of the large number of Indians there is to be converted on this Orinoco, of divers and different barbarous nations inhabiting its territories; in view of the Royal authority granted by His Majesty (God preserve him) to the Reverend Franciscan Fathers, missionaries of Piritu, for the conversion of the Caribs of this Orinoco, and there being a very great abundance of this territory, and much heathenism therein to be converted to the fold of the Church; being apprised of the lack of workers for the purpose on this said Orinoco, and recognizing also the great fervor in the propagation of our holy Catholic faith of the missionaries of Piritu, and that they had not on the other side of the Orinoco (there being no Indians there) a field to work, owing to the great spread of their conversions, and because all those living on the other side of the said Orinoco have been settled in twenty towns they have founded, with those already consecrated to the Catholic religion and living in the Evangelical law; in order that the Royal will may be carried out by the increase of the conversions, and that the said Reverend missionary Fathers of Piritu may have where to exercise their Apostolic zeal, he determined to bring with him the said Reverend Father Friar Francisco de las Llagas with his four companions, so that for the better service of both Majesties there be designated by the said Very Reverend Father Joseph Gummilla and the Reverend Capuchin Fathers, territories where they may on their part spread the preaching of the Holy Gospel and labor in the vineyard of the Lord according to their calling.

"Which being heard by the Reverend Jesuit and Capu-

chin Fathers, they counselled and conferred thereon for a long time, and having reflected on the case and what was the most advisable thing to do, they agreed and stated that for the best service of both Majesties it was necessary and very expedient to designate territories for them, to gain time in the conversion and saving of souls, and they said unanimously and of one accord that they designated, and at once did designate, for the said Reverend Franciscan Friars, present and future, that they may establish and found whatever settlements they could in this part of Guayana, from Angostura on the Orinoco up as far as the banks on this lower side of the Cuchivero river, making a straight line from the banks of the said Orinoco to the Marañon, or Amazon; the Reverend Capuchin Fathers, to encourage their conversions, remaining with the territory and district lying between the said Angostura and the principal mouth of the said Orinoco, down stream, where the missionaries joining them will distribute themselves; and the Reverend Jesuit Fathers, from the banks of the upper part of the said Cuchivero river, all the rest of the Orinoco, going always up, and all limits or boundaries in a straight line from the Orinoco to the Marañon, or Amazon.

“Which, having been heard and understood by the said Reverend Franciscan Fathers, they unanimously and of one accord, said that once, twice, thrice, and as many times as may be necessary, for themselves and in the name of their Prelate, the Very Reverend Father Commissary of Piritu, Friar Francisco Rodriguez, and the other missionaries of the said conversion of Piritu, present and future; they accepted and they did accept the said territory so designated for them, and with demonstrations of humility and gratefulness they extended repeated thanks to the said Reverend Father Superior and Prefect and the other Capuchin Fathers, each regarding the other and promising themselves great increase of Christianity through the medium of so much union and fervor.

“After which they agreed, and said unanimously and of one accord, that in order to prevent difficulties in the future that might disturb the peace they desire to maintain, that they establish, and from the moment stipulate and agree, that

whereas there are several Indian Nations within the limits designated, they declare that as regards the conversion of said nations so situated within the limits, it is to be free for him who most labors in its advancement; so that, without excepting any nation, each Mission may, on its own part, convert and advance as many as it can of the nations within its limits; and the Indians once having been subjugated, they are to belong to the Mission of the sect subjugating them, without being allowed to pass to another; binding themselves reciprocally, should they do so, to always return them to their possession, which is established as a distinct article, to act contrarywise being prohibited now and forever—to which they agree.

“And his Honor, the said Governor and Captain General said that he approved, and did approve, this compromise, convention and agreement, and that he therein interposed and did interpose his authority and judicial decree that it may have force and effect now and at all times, and that in the name of the King our Master he extended thanks to the Reverend Fathers for the Apostolic zeal shown in the increase of the holy Catholic faith, and he ordered me, the scrivener, to furnish their Reverences with the exemplified copies they should request, and his Honor with those necessary to report to H. M.; and he signed it with the Fathers—to which I certify.

“DON CARLOS SUCRE.

“FRIAR FRANCISCO DE LAS LLAGAS,

“President of the Missions of the Orinoco.

“JOSEPH GUMILLA, *Societatis Jesus*.

“FRAY AGUSTIN DE OLOT, Prefect.

“FRIAR MATHIAS GARCIA.

“FRIAR FRANCISCO RODRIGUEZ DE LEDESMA.

“FRIAR LORENZO DE ALGAVA.

“FRIAR BERNARDINO CAMACHO BEDOYA.

“FRIAR BENITO DE MOYA.

“FRIAR ANTONIO BERGA.

“FRIAR THOMAS DE SANTA EUGENIA.

“Before me—

“DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,

“Royal Notary.”



"And it having been considered in my Council of the Indias, with the opinion of my Attorney General, it has been resolved to grant this request, and to confirm and approve in every respect (as by these presents I do) the agreement aforesaid. Wherefore I command the Presidents and Associate Judges of the *Audiencias*, Governors, and Royal Officers of the jurisdictions to which the territories designated in the said agreement belong, and any other persons charged with the carrying out of the contents thereof, and I request and charge the Bishop or Bishops who may be respectively interested, and the Superiors of the three sects referred to, to observe, obey, and execute the same, and cause it to be obeyed and executed, without in any way contravening its contents, or part thereof, for such is my will.

"Done at San Ildephonso on the sixteenth of September of seventeen hundred and thirty-six. I, the King. By command of the King our Master, Don Juan Bentura de Maturana. And at the bottom of the said Royal Decree appear three flourishes, indicating signatures, which appear to be those of the Señores of the Royal and Supreme Council of these Indias."

(*Bottom.*) " \* \* \* Pursuant to which, and in order that the Royal will expressed in the hereinbefore inserted Royal resolutions, as well as the others which his Honor took into consideration in preparing the provisions and orders resulting from the visit to the Presidio and Province of Guayana included in the edict aforesaid, may have effect, in the name of the King our Master I exhort and require, and on my part pray and request the Very Reverend Father Commissary of Piritu, that with respect to the duties of his office, he cause to issue and issue the proper instructions looking to its fulfillment, and do not consent to any act contrary in any degree to the tenor and form of the above inserted edict and Royal Mandates until H. M. (God preserve him), in view of the said edict, and of the rest of the said visit, which are to be transmitted to him, shall command whatever may best befit his Royal pleasure regarding the granting of such requests of the said Very Reverend Father Commissary.

" Done in this city of Cumana on the twenty-fourth of May of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

" GREGORIO ESPINOSA.

" By order of the Governor and Captain General.

" DIEGO ANTONIO ALCALA,  
" Scrivener of the Governor's Office."

---

(Page 204)—*Reply to the Contents of Article 34 of the Edict based on the Visit.*

"To the First Article of the said letters rogatory, which is the thirty-fourth of the results of the visits to Guayana made by your Honor, I reply that by no means ought we to relinquish the sites of the Mamo and Cabruta which, as your Honor says in his letters rogatory, the Reverend Fathers of the Society of Jesus deny are ours, because both places were granted us, and we held possession thereof, and we only will desist from claiming them for settling when both Reverend Fathers make known to us a Royal resolution in their favor, contradicting our assertion, because if to prevent us settling them they rely on the Decree based on the Agreement made in Guayana, our right is very clearly set forth therein."

*Reply to the 35th.*

" To the Second Article of the said letters, the thirty-fifth of the Articles of said visit, I reply that, considering as a necessary and preliminary step the effort to secure the outer defence for the Indian settlements, which we earnestly desire to found on this as well as on the other side of the Orinoco with Carib Indians, and any other nation, we are earnestly taking the proper steps to accomplish our desires, so that some Spaniards may be settled wherever convenient for the said purposes and duty. We will, therefore, report to Y. H. when our purposes are more advanced."

*Reply to Article 36.*

" To the Third Article of the said letters and thirty-sixth of the Articles of said visit, I reply that we present in due form

the Decrees in which our King and Master commands that in the locality of the plains there be founded some settlements of the fugitives from these Missions, which is what forces us to make the request while they live like abjurers of the Christian religion, which we regret inexpressibly, it not being our intention that these settlements shall be in disservice of the King our Master and the injury of his Royal Treasury; but rather that, securing the spiritual welfare we earnestly desire, they may serve the King our Master paying tribute (should Y. H. so think just, which it is not our purpose to oppose) and guarding the coasts and other lands, and also serving as an outer defence, so that the loss of these settlements may not increase, which is the principal object, since the King our Master so determined."

*Reply to the 37th.*

"To the Fourth Article of said letters—the thirty-seventh of the Articles of the said visit—I reply that as up to the present, incurring the indispensable expense in the subjugation of the Indians and founding of settlements, we have spent what was necessary for human life which the King our Master gives us as alms, and other funds from benefactors, without doing any work or experiencing suffering, and have succeeded in preserving what has been done, as well as made progress in the conversions, so we will do in the future so long as there exists within us the desire for the greater increase of the Catholic fold."

*Reply to the 38th.*

"To the Fifth Article of said letters—the thirty-eighth of the Articles of said visit—I reply that whenever the priests may have to go out to perform the labors of the Apostolic task, it will be with the permission and consent of Y. H., and we shall appreciate greatly any suggestion or direction that in such case you may be pleased to give us through the experience or knowledge Y. H. may have of what is then to be undertaken."

*(Page 205.)—Reply to Art. 39.*

"To the Sixth Article of said letters—which is the thirtieth of the Articles of said visits—I reply that looking first

to the need of ministers which there was in some settlements ; second to the need that the greater number should be at places suitable for learning the languages of the Indians ; and third, and last, to the fact that the need is great, and that there should be a greater number of priests where they can best maintain themselves, they are stationed as follows :

“ First, in the Mission town and school of Piritu, the Very Reverend Father Preacher-General and Commissary of said Missions and schools, as Curate of said town, and its congregation by the Royal patronage.

“ In the town of San Antonio de Clarines, the Father-Preacher Friar Bartholome del Corral Zamora, as coadjutor of the said Very Reverend Father Commissary ; in the Missionary town and school of San Juan Evangelista del Tucyo, Father-Preacher Alonzo Hinestrosa, as Curate-Teacher of said town and its dependency, by the Royal patronage ; in the town of San Juan Capistrano del Purney, Father-Preacher Friar Francisco Constuela, as coadjutor of said Father.

“ In the Missionary town and school of San Miguel de Araveniquar, the Reverend Father Preacher-General Friar Francisco Rodrigues Ledesma, as Curate-Teacher of said town, and its dependencies, by the Royal patronage.

“ In the town of San Francisco de Hueriguoquar, Father-Preacher Friar Martin Cuchillo, as coadjutor.

“ In the town of San Pablo de Materuco, Father-Preacher Friar Cristobal Martines, as coadjutor of said Reverend Father, and in company with the said coadjutor, Father-Preacher Friar Cristobal Lendines.

“ In the town of San Lorenzo de Guere, Father-Preacher Friar Antonio Borrego, as coadjutor, and in his company Father-Preacher Friar Antonio Caulin.

“ In the Missionary school and town of Nuestra Señora del Pilar de Guaimacuar and its dependency, Reverend Father Preacher-General Friar Francisco del Castillo, as Curate-Teacher, by the Royal patronage ; and in his company Fathers-Preachers Friar Francisco Serra, as coadjutor, and (for the said purposes) Friar Juan Ferreiro, Friar Lucas Magarinos, Friar Benito de Puentes, Friar Andres Galisteo, Friar Carlos

Tarina, and lay brothers Friar Alonso Calvo, and Friar Juan de la Asumpcion.

"In the town of Caigua, Father-Preacher Friar Antonio Carrillo, as coadjutor, and in his company, Father-Preacher Friar Julian Garcia.

"In the Missionary town and school of San Bernardino de Huetequar, as Curate-Teacher, Father-Preacher Friar Bernardino Camacho, by the Royal patronage; in said town as coadjutor, Father-Preacher Friar Juan Velasques, and in company with these, Brother Marcos Francisco Esteves.

"In the town of San Joseph de Curataquiche and its dependencies, Father-Preacher Friar Thomas Velasques, as coadjutor; in the Missionary town and school of Nuestro Señor del Amparo de los Posuelos, as Curate-Teacher by the Royal patronage, the Rev. Father Preacher-General Friar Blas del Castillo.

"In the town of San Diego de Saviriquar, as coadjutor, Father-Preacher Friar Francisco Moyano y Pinos.

"In the town of Nuestro Padre Santo Domingo de Aragua, as coadjutor, Very Reverend Father ex-Commissary Friar Diego Francisco Ybañez.

"In the Mission town of the Apostle San Matheo de Prepuntar, Father-Preacher Friar Pedro Cordero, and in his company, Father-Preacher Friar Alonso Rubio.

"In the Mission town of Santa Rosa de Ocopi, Reverend Father Procurator-General Friar Joseph de Vega, as Missionary founder.

"In the Mission town of San Joaquin del Paril, as Missionary founder, Reverend Father Procurator-General Friar Fernando Ximenes.

"In the Mission town of San Buenaventura de la Margarita, as Missionary-Converter, Very Reverend Father ex-Commissary Friar Mathias Garcia.

"In the Mission town of Santa Ana de Anaco, as Missionary converter, Father-Preacher Friar Francisco Nistal Yañez; and in his company, Father-Preacher Friar Pedro Dias.

"In the Mission town of Santa Barbara de Curucay, Rev.

Father-Procurator-General Friar Fernando Matheos, as Missionary founder; and in his company, Father-Precacher Friar Francisco Perez Carpallo.

"In the Missionary town of Nuestra Señora de la Candelaria de Chamanapa, Father-Precacher Friar Jeronimo Martin, as Missionary converter.

The answer to the seventh requisition, the fortieth article of the visit is, that in view, and with a formal knowledge of the temporal as well as the spiritual reasons advanced by some of the Reverend Fathers, we could not disregard them without dereliction of duty and neglect of the interest of the Royal Treasury in our charge. The reasons advanced by the Reverend Fathers were justified, and I can not disclose them, as it might involve a greater waste of funds; we became aware of their discomforts, and their entreaties in reference to what was considered detrimental to the King our Master, who continues reviving the allowances of alms granted for our support, and it seems that all those expenses, while unprofitable to the Royal Treasury, might disturb and weigh on our consciences, and that by granting the leaves requested the Royal Treasury was benefited, and the King our Master and your Honor duly served, as it is not to be expected that His Majesty should want to use any more funds than those absolutely necessary for the purpose of carrying on these Missions. The permissions granted to some Reverend Fathers to go to several Provinces of these Kingdoms, where the service of both Majesties might be promoted, without any further cost than what has been already incurred, were not in violation of the laws regulating the patents and orders of our most Reverend Fathers and General Commissaries of Indias, which are and must be approved by the Royal Council. And as I have adjusted my conduct to the laws of those patents and orders, when allowing the permissions already mentioned, there seems to be no fault to be found on either side. We are aware that a pass from your Honor is necessary for the Reverend Fathers when they intend going out of this Province; but the reasons, as I have already asserted, for granting the leaves were

satisfactory, and although I can not disclose them now to your Honor, I may do so verbally and extra-judicially if opportunity offers. I might have done so before, but I have not had a fitting occasion. However, in granting the leave for the reasons already mentioned, the Fathers were not precluded from taking, on their part, proper steps to secure the pass they ought to have obtained from your Honor.

"This being all Y. H. requests at this time, we comply with and obey gladly the orders set forth in the above inserted letters rogatory and Royal Decrees of H. M., compliance with which you demand (and which we ever wish to give), without any trespassing on our part or on that of the Reverend Jesuit or Capuchin Fathers of the other side of the Orinoco river, where, according to the said Royal Decrees, the said Reverend Fathers can say they have territory on which to found their Missions; because neither the Rev. Jesuit Fathers had any Royal authority to establish themselves in Cabruta nor have the Rev. Capuchin Fathers any way of preventing us from settling the Mamo; for we, having commenced and continued our missions since the year seventeen hundred and twenty-three (when Guayana was in every respect subject to the Government of the Island of Trinidad), and the said Reverend Capuchin Fathers having entered that country of the Mamo and the other lands on this side of the said river, it seems they can have no right by Royal authority of H. M. to said localities, and if either of said Reverend Fathers have such right, it appears they should have shown it, because if they rely on the said Decree based on the Agreement, the contrary is very clearly apparent therefrom.

"Wherefore, being, as we are, ready to execute the said Royal Decree and the others, as also, the express orders of Y. H. and as many as for the service of both Majesties you may be pleased to give us, you should be pleased to endeavor, in the manner that may seem most advisable to Y. H., to have the said Reverend Jesuit and Capuchin Fathers do likewise, without their invoking anything or interpreting the Royal provisions, in order to prevent (through a failure so to do, all of us acting against the Royal will of H. M.) our wasting time in quarrels,

which, aside from leaving a bad odor, must indubitably work a serious procrastination in the conversion of souls, to which we do not believe the great zeal and Christianity of Y. M. will give countenance, and we so hope.

"And this being done with the common consent of the Venerable Advisory Board of this Community, this paper is delivered the Commandant, Don Jeronimo Peres de Aguilera, Lieutenant and Chief Judge of the city of Nueva Barcelona, that he may transmit it to your Honor's hands, taking a receipt from the party to whom the said Don Jeronimo Peres de Aguilera may entrust it.

"Done in this Missionary town of San Bernardino de Gues-tequar, on the seventh of July, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

"FRIAR SALVADOR ROMERO,

"Commissary of Piritu.

"By command of the Very Reverend Father, Don Francisco Rodrigues Ledesma, Secretary.

"Cumaná, July twenty-second, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three."

---

*Decree.*

File this answer with the first part of the record of the visit to Guayana.

ESPINOSA.

---

To the Governor and Captain General. Friar Salvador Romero, of the regular Order of our Father St. Francis, Preacher-General, Curate-Teacher, and Apostolic Commissary of the Missions and schools of the Purisima Concepcion de Piritu.

Referring to the letters rogatory of Y. H., dated in Cumaná on the twenty-fourth of May of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, issued at the instance of this Holy Community to the effect that (pursuant to Royal provisions of the King our Master, which ought to be in the archives of Y. H.'s office, as they were laid before Y. H. in due form) there be founded



two or three settlements, in the portion of the plains, of the fugitive Indians from these Missions who are roving and almost apostate over said plains as well as over the valleys of the Province of Caracas; which Y. H. did not determine to do, desiring, as in said letters rogatory is stated, a clearer and further report, which I ought not to evade furnishing in order to secure the welfare of so many lost souls, and in compliance with the Royal will which is patent in the Royal decree, which I again insert herein, and which is of the tenor following:

“The King—(*Page 211*)—Reverend in Christ, Father Bishop of the Cathedral Church of San Juan de Puerto-Rico of my Council:

“Friar Francisco Rodriguez, of the order of St. Francis, Preacher and Apostolic Missionary of the new conversions of Piritu in the Province of Cumaná, has petitioned me, among other things which he has proposed for the better preservation and increase of the said Missions, relief and comfort of the sufferings of the missionaries and Indians thereof, to be pleased to command the retaking of all the Indians that have run away from the said Missions, and who may be found in the valleys or cattle ranches of the Government of Caracas, and that its Governor cause them to be restored at once to their proper domicil, where the greater part had left their women perishing, so that the Governor of Cumaná should found therewith two or three settlements in the best adapted locality of the plains, that they may serve as a restraint and obstacle to the flight of the Indians settled in the Missions, and as an aid to the priests in founding other settlements.

“And it having been considered in my Council of the Indias, together with what was written on the subject by Don Matheo del Maso, present Governor of the said Province of Cumaná, in a letter of the third of May of last year (seventeen hundred and thirteen), and the opinion of my Attorney General, it has been decided to command (as is done by dispatch of even date herewith) the said Governor of Caracas to issue the necessary orders to promptly restore to their proper domicil all Indians that may have fled from the said Missions of Piritu, who may

be found in the valleys or cattle ranches of that Government; and to command also the Governor of Cumana, that with the Indians so retaken there be founded two or three settlements in the most appropriate portion of the plains, that they may serve as a restraint and obstacle for the Indians settled in the Missions, and as an aid for the priests in founding new settlements, warning this latter Governor (as is done) to see to it carefully that the settlements established with the said class of Indians shall be carried on, and that the Indians be prohibited from running away, and in case they so do, to proceed to punish them as a warning to the others. Which I have wished to impart to you so that in view of the said provisions you may assist (as I pray and charge you) in the said purpose of making the settlements founded with the Indians permanent.

“Done in Madrid on the thirtieth of December of seventeen hundred and fourteen. I, the King. By command of the King our Master, Señor Diego de Morales Velasco.”

In view of which, and of the rest I cite and is pertinent, Y. H. should be pleased to issue the necessary licenses so that said Royal commands may be complied with, and also to agree, in the manner your Honor may deem best, with the Governor of the said Province of Caracas, that he assist in so far as he is empowered in the accomplishment of said end which is so serviceable to both Majesties. Which I petition and request, so far as my duty allows, in the name of all this holy Community, assuring you that I am moved to make this petition by no one thing save the good of so many wandering souls and the great service it will do our King and Master, besides securing, through the settlements proposed (and which H. M. orders) a safe outer defence to prevent the continuance of the flight of these Indians, through which the Royal Treasury suffers no small loss. There is also secured for H. M. the service of the wanderers, giving return, as in other ways, by guarding the lands and coasts of this Province, in which we shall take special pleasure as true vassals, on which we pride ourselves, and the said Indians will secure the spiritual nourishment they lack, which pains us to the heart; which is what

impels us to molest Y. H. with this petition. And no less can the Indians of these settlements, who live in their cattle ranches (and it is irremediable, through the Royal laws granting you the right) easily secure the use of the sacraments, since the experience is that owing to the long distance to their settlements, and the obstacles interposed by the rains, they die each day without them. By reason of which, as such a Christian, I believe Y. H. will sympathize and will aid as far as possible in the consummation of what I wish, to which Y. H. will be pleased to give ear, protesting my obedience to the orders you may be pleased to give me.

Done in this Missionary town of San Bernardino de Gueste-quar, on the eighth day of July, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

FRIAR SALVADOR ROMERO,  
Commissary of Piritu.

By command of the Very Reverend Friar Prefect, Francisco Rodriguez Ledesma, Secretary of the Mission.

---

*Order.*

His Honor, the Governor and Captain General, having considered the foregoing petition, orders that it be attached to the first part of the records of the visit to Guayana, and that the Secretary of the Government search in the Archives and files of his office and the officials of the Royal Treasury in that of the Royal Auditor's office, and the Notaries of this city, each in the archives and files of his own office, for the Royal Decree inserted in the said petition, together with the presentation, orders, and action taken in pursuance thereof, and produce the same, in order that he may, pursuant thereto, render his decision in the premises.

His Honor, the Governor and Captain General, so ordered and signed in Cumaná on the twenty-second of July, of seventeen hundred and forty-three, on ordinary paper, the stamped paper having been exhausted ; to which I certify.

ESPINOSA.

Before me—

DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
Royal and Public Notary.

Immediately thereafter I, the Scrivener, made known the foregoing order personally to the officials of the Royal Treasury; to which I certify.

ALCALA, Scrivener.

Immediately thereafter I, the Scrivener, made known the said order personally to my fellow-scriveners, Don Pedro de la Guerra y Vega and Don Antonio de Alcala; to which I certify.

ALCALA, Scrivener.

---

*Notification.*

And in compliance with the instructions in said order, I, the Scrivener, certify that I have searched in the archives and files entrusted to me for the Royal Decree inserted in the foregoing petition, and the orders issued pursuant thereto, and have found them not, nor do I recall that said Royal Decree was filed with me; and having looked for them in the books and papers of the Royal Auditor's office as Notary of the Royal Treasury, by order of the Royal officials, I found in the current book, opened on the fourteenth of May, seventeen hundred and six, for recording Royal Decrees, at page 322, reverse, the entry of a Royal Decree of the same tenor and date of that inserted in the said petition, addressed to the Governor and Captain General of the Province of Caracas, and on page 322 of the same book another like decree addressed to this Government, without discovering any orders pursuant thereto nor any including that inserted in the said petition, and having proceeded to request them of the Secretary of Government, in the archives of his office, I found them not, although all the orders and Royal Decrees were gone over, among which there was only found an original Royal Decree of the same tenor as that inserted in the said petition addressed to this Government.

And that it may so appear, I make a record thereof in this city of Cumaná on the seventeenth of August, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
Public and Treasury Notary.

*Another.*

I, Don Pedro de la Guerra y Vega, Notary Public of the number, Government and Council of this city, certify : That I have inspected and searched the archives entrusted to me with the required care, all the papers and advertisements composing them, and have not found therein the Royal Decree mentioned in the preceding order issued by the Governor and Captain General, nor do I remember that it was filed with me ; and complying with what was ordered by his Honor, I issue these presents in Cumaná, on the eighteenth of August, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

PEDRO DE LA GUERRA Y VEGA,  
Government and Public Notary.

---

*Another.*

I, the undersigned Notary, certify that there has not been presented or filed before me the Royal Decree requested by the Governor and Captain General, for among the papers composing the archives in my charge I have been unable to find it, although I searched carefully for it.

And in testimony of the truth, I issue these presents in Cumaná, on the twenty-first of August, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
Government and Public Notary.

---

*Order.*

Having considered the reply of the Very Reverend Father Commissary of the conventions of Piritu, Friar Salvador Romero, of the Order of St. Francis, to the letters rogatory of his Honor, dated the twenty-fourth of May of this year; incorporating four Royal Decrees, and the petition of the said Rev. Father, which is attached to these records, dated the eighth of July of the same year, in which his Reverence includes a Royal Decree, issued in Madrid on the thirtieth of December of seventeen hundred and fourteen, whereby, at the instance

of Friar Francisco Rodriguez, Apostolic missionary of the same conversion, H. M. commanded the ecclesiastic Ordinary and Governor of Caracas to take the steps to restore to their proper domicile all the Indians of said Missions of Piritu that may have fled and were to be found in the valleys and cattle ranches of the said Government; and, likewise, commanded this Government of Cumaná to found with the Indians so retaken two or three settlements in the most available portion of the plains, together with the rest in said Royal Decrees, letters rogatory and reply of the said Father Commissary contained, his Honor, the Governor and Captain General, said :

That he ought to order, and ordered that for the present, and until further resolution of H. M., the Prelate and Reverend Community of Piritu, present and future, carry out and execute the contents of Articles from 33 to 40 of the edict on the results of the visit, issued by his Honor in Cumaná, on the thirteenth of May of this year, for the reasons therein set forth, and principally observing the subsequent Royal Decrees which were included in the letters rogatory sent to the Reverend Father Commissary, without in anywise acting contrary to what is therein provided, or to what his Honor has ordered ; and that a second letter rogatory be sent inserting this order of request and charge to the said Reverend Father Commissary, advising him to inform his Honor in writing and formally of the steps taken to carry out the said Royal Decree, dated in Madrid, on the thirteenth of December, of seventeen hundred and fourteen; what number of Indians were taken, and what settlements were founded in the space of more than twenty-nine years of time which have elapsed ; and that, likewise, his Reverence and the Reverend Community continue to take the advisable measures with the Ordinary and Governor of Caracas to retake and restore to their proper domicile all fugitive Indians to be found in the said jurisdiction, to which end his Honor is ready to furnish, on his part, assistance, as he did on his entrance into this Government, at the instance of the Reverend Father Commissary Friar Mathias Garcia who presented the said Royal Decree which his Honor ordered to be noted in the Auditor's Office, and appointed on

- his part an official satisfactory to the said Rev. Father Friar Mathias Garcia, to assist him in the premises with all the necessary aid; although up to the present no report has been made to this Government of any results of so important a measure, the purpose of which, referred to by the Reverend Father Friar Francisco Rodriguez in the name of the Reverend Community, should be continued and the Indians brought back to their proper domicil, without entering into our settlements in the execution of the provisions of the said letters rogatory until, in view of the other Royal Decrees and provisions of the visit to Guayana, H. M. shall resolve what is most expedient and harmonious to his Royal pleasure.

And as regards the thirty-ninth Article of the Edict on the results of the visit, since the reply of the Father Commissary does not specify the number of priests with statement of the employment of the thirty-nine lately arrived, so as to reach a full knowledge of those on leave, which appear to be eleven or twelve, his Reverence will be pleased to transmit a succinct statement, name by name, of those of the thirty-nine now present, including therein, specifically, the priests to whom leave was granted by his Reverence, abstaining, as is provided by the Royal laws, from granting any more such leaves without a previous report and approval of this Superior Government, and from interpreting, under weak pretexts, the Royal laws treating of the subject; for, in case of a recurrence thereof, his Honor will find himself obliged to exercise the remedies provided for in such abuses, and any pretexts of the missionaries, which the Catholic piety of the King destines for these conversions at so great an expense, will not avail. His Reverence has not only offended by breaking the laws, but through the serious inconveniences resulting from the priests wandering over these dominions of the Indias away from their station and cloister; and if by the cited precepts of their holy rule, as the Father Commissary states, they can not divulge the reasons which compelled them to grant such leaves by interpreting, no harm is done his opinion, because the three patents and orders of the Most Reverend Fathers Commissary of the conversions of Piritu are passed on by the Council, let him state,

directly and without interpretation, whether to grant the leaves to the priests he obtained special orders from the Very Reverend Father Commissary General, and even if he did receive them let him exhibit the same so as to give (*sic*). For although the Very Reverend Father Commissary General expressly orders the granting of leaves to one or more priests, it is understood to be subject to the Royal laws and provisions, and it must not be thought that the said Very Reverend Commissary General can evade or attempt to defy them. Wherefore his Honor infers that the reply of the Father Commissary on this subject is interpretation of the Royal laws and the orders of the Very Reverend Father Commissary General, which the Father Commissary of these conversions of Piritu must refrain from by understanding and giving punctual obedience to the letter of the Royal laws and the orders.

And by these presents his Honor the Governor and Captain General of these Provinces so ordered and signed, in this city of Cumaná, on the second of September of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, on ordinary paper, there being no stamped paper; to which I certify.

GREGORIO ESPINOSA.

Before me—

DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
Royal and Public Notary.

NOTE.—On the second of September of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three the letter rogatory mentioned in the preceding order was sent.

---

*Letter Rogatory to the Father Commissary of Piritu.*

Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, Brigadier of the Royal Armies, Governor and Captain General of Nueva Andalucía, Nueva Barcelona, Guayana, their coasts and Presidios, for the King our Master, &c.

I make known to the Very Reverend Father Friar Salvador Romero, Commissary of the Reverend Community of Apostolic missionaries of Piritu, that in view of the answer which his



Reverence made to the letters rogatory of the twenty-fourth of May of this year, which I sent him, requesting observance and obedience, in so far as attaches to his office, of what was ordered in the edict on the results of the visit I made to the Presidio and Missions of Guayana, I have issued another order, which is of the tenor following:

*Order.*

"Having considered the reply of the Very Reverend Father-Commissary of the conventions of Piritu, Friar Salvador Romero, of the Order of St. Francis, to the letters rogatory of his Honor, dated the twenty-fourth day of May of this year, incorporating four Royal Decrees, and the petition of the said Rev. Father, which is attached to these records, dated the eighth of July of the same year, in which his Reverence includes a Royal Decree, issued in Madrid on the thirtieth of December of seventeen hundred and fourteen, whereby at the instance of Friar Francisco Rodriguez, Apostolic missionary of the same conversion, H. M. commanded the ecclesiastic Ordinary and Governor of Caracas to take the steps to restore to their proper domicil all the Indians of said Missions of Piritu that may have fled and were to be found in the valleys and cattle ranches of the said Government; and, likewise, commanded this Government of Cumaná to found, with the Indians so retaken, two or three settlements in the most adaptable portion of the plains, together with the rest in said Royal Decrees, letters rogatory and reply of the said Father Commissary contained, his Honor, the Governor and Captain General, said:

"That he ought to order, and orders, that for the present, and until further resolution of H. M., the Prelate and Reverend Community of Piritu, present and future, carry out and execute the contents of Articles from 33 to 40 of the edict on the results of the visit, issued by his Honor in Cumaná, on the thirteenth of May of this year, for the reasons therein set forth, and principally observing the subsequent Royal Decrees which were included in the letters rogatory sent to the Reverend Father Commissary, without in anywise acting contrary to what

is therein provided, or to what his Honor has ordered ; and that a second letter rogatory be sent inserting this order of request and charge to the said Reverend Father Commissary, advising him to inform his Honor in writing and formally of the steps taken to carry out the said Royal Decree, dated in Madrid on the thirteenth of December of seventeen hundred and fourteen ; what number of Indians were taken, and what settlements were founded in the space of more than twenty-nine years of time which have elapsed ; and that, likewise, His Reverence and the Reverend Community continue to take the advisable measures with the Ordinary and Governor of Caracas to retake and restore to their proper domicil all fugitive Indians to be found in the said jurisdiction, to which end his Honor is ready to furnish, on his part, assistance, as he did on his entrance into this Government at the instance of the Reverend Father Commissary Friar Mathias Garcia, who presented the said Royal Decree, which his Honor ordered to be noted in the Auditor's Office, and appointed on his part an official satisfactory to the said Rev. Father Friar Mathias Garcia, to assist him in the premises with all the necessary aid ; although up to the present no report has been made to this Government of any results of so important a measure, the purpose of which, referred to by the Reverend Father Friar Francisco Rodriguez in the name of the Reverend Community, should be continued and the Indians brought back to their proper domicil, without entering into our settlements, in the execution of the provisions of the said letters rogatory, until, in view of the other Royal Decrees and provisions of the visit to Guayana, H. M. shall resolve what is most expedient and harmonious to his Royal pleasure.

“ And as regards the thirty-ninth Article of the Edict on the results of the visit, since the reply of the Father Commissary does not specify the number of priests, with statement of the employment of the thirty-nine lately arrived, so as to reach a full knowledge of those on leave, which appear to be eleven or twelve, his Reverence will be pleased to transmit a succinct statement, name by name, of those of the thirty-nine now present, including therein, specifically, the priests to whom

leave was granted by his Reverence, abstaining, as is provided by the Royal laws, from granting any more such leaves without a previous report and approval of the Superior Government, and from interpreting, under weak pretexts, the Royal laws treating of the subject, for, in case of a recurrence thereof, his Honor will find himself obliged to exercise the remedies provided for in such abuses, and any pretexts of the missionaries which the Catholic piety of the King destines for these conversions at so great an expense, will not avail.

“His Reverence has not only offended by breaking the laws, but through the serious inconveniences resulting from the priests wandering over these dominions of the Indias away from their station and cloister; and if by the cited precepts of their holy rule, as the Father Commissary states, they can not divulge the reasons which compelled them to grant such leaves by interpreting, no harm is done his opinion, because the three patents and orders of the Most Reverend Fathers Commissary of the conversions of Piritu are passed on by the Council, let him state, directly and without any interpretation, whether to grant the leaves to the priests he obtained special orders from the Very Reverend Father Commissary-General, and even if he did receive them let him exhibit the same so as to give (*sic*).

“For although the Very Reverend Father Commissary-General expressly orders the granting of leave to one or more priests, it is understood to be subject to the Royal laws and provisions, and it must not be thought that the said Very Reverend Commissary-General can evade or attempt to defy them. Wherefore, his Honor infers that the reply of the Father Commissary on this subject is interpretation of the Royal laws and the orders of the Very Reverend Father Commissary-General, which the Father Commissary of these conversions of Piritu must refrain from by understanding and giving punctual obedience to the letter of the Royal laws and the orders.

“And by these presents, his Honor, the Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, so ordered and signed, in this city of Cumaná, on the second of September of the year seven-

teen hundred and forty-three, on ordinary paper, there being no stamped paper; to which I certify.

GREGORIO ESPINOSA.

Before me—

DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
Royal and Public Notary.

Wherefore, in the name of the King our Master, I require and demand, and on my part request and urge, the said Very Reverend Father Commissary of Piritu to consider the enclosed order, and cause it to be obeyed and obey the same, with the assurance that I shall likewise carry out all its proper provisions in this Tribunal of Government. And in order that the Very Reverend Father may be apprised hereof, that the present letter rogatory be sent to the Ordinary Second Alcalde of the city of Nueva Barcelona, with the written necessary order to proceed to the settlement where the said Reverend Father lives, read and explain the same to him, and furnish him an exemplified copy, should he request it, and return the original with the endorsement thereon.

Done in the city of Cumaná, on the third of September, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three.

DOÑ GREGORIO ESPINOSA.

By command of the Governor and Captain General—

DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,  
Government Scrivener.

---

In this town town of Piritu, on the thirteenth day of September, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three, I, Don Agustin de Guevara, Captain and Magistrate, Ordinary Second Alcalde of the city of Nueva Barcelona, pursuant to the mission entrusted to me by the Governor and Captain General in the foregoing order, accompanied by two witnesses, proceeded to the Convent, situate in this town, where lives the Very Reverend Commissary Friar Salvador Romero, and I read to and notified him of the requisitorial order, as is provided by said Governor, and he, having heard the same, re-

requested that I furnish him an exemplified copy, which pursuant to said order is given.

In order that it may so appear, I certify and sign with the witnesses.

AGUSTIN DE GUEVARA.

JUAN AGUSTIN DE GUEVARA,  
YGNACIO DE LA VEGA,

Witnesses.

On this day I gave an exemplified copy of the requisitorial letter to the Very Reverend Father Friar Salvador Romero, as commanded by his Honor.

GUEVARA.

—  
This agrees with the first part of the original records of the visit to Guayana made by the Governor and Captain General of these Provinces, which now remains in my possession to be filed with other records on the same subject in the Government archives, to which I refer.

And by order of the said Governor, I, Don Diego Antonio de Alcala, Royal Notary of the King our Master in his western Indias, Islands, and Main Land of the Oceanic Sea, Notary Public of the number of the Government, Council, Mines, and Tribunal of the Royal Treasury in the city of Cumaná, where I reside, issue this written copy, covering two hundred and twenty-seven leaves, including the two plats, corrected and signed with my customary flourish.

And in testimony thereof I sign and seal it in this city of Cumaná, on the twentieth of September, of the year seventeen hundred and forty-three. *In testimonium veritatis.*

DIEGO ANTONIO DE ALCALA,

Royal and Public Notary—

[there is a flourish and seal].

—  
It is a copy agreeing with the original of its contents existing in these General Archives of the Indias, in Case 56, Shelf 6, Bundle 21. Seville, May 18, 1891.

[SEAL.]

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,  
Chief Librarian.

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias.

Madrid, June 1, 1891.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XXIII.**

Case 131.—Shelf 7.—Bundle 17.

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIAS.—(SEVILLE.)

---

**Document No. 3.**

---

**1757.—Letter from Don Jose Yturriaga to the Most Excellent Senor Don Ricardo Wall, regarding news received relating to the construction by the Dutch of a new fort on the Maruca river, to windward and a short distance from the Boca de Navios of the Orinoco; and another letter from Don Juan Valdes to Don Jose Yturriaga on the same subject.**

---

Most Excellent Sir—

MY DEAR SIR: Having understood through the Capuchin Fathers of Guayana that the Dutch were constructing a new fort on the Maruca river, to windward and a short distance from the *Boca de Navios* of the Orinoco, and being certain that the Commandant of Guayana would not of his own motion take any measures to ascertain the fact, or the purpose, I requested him to send there, at my expense, a launch with pilots to go up the passage exploring the river, and inspect the condition of the building, its materials, dimensions, artillery, and garrison. And he replied, under date of December 2, what Y. E. will learn from the annexed copy.

What I understand from the report is that the purpose is to establish some sugar plantations, adding to the owners and slaves a number of Acoca Indians, who have their greatest confidence, to prevent the passing of deserters, soldiers, and Indian slaves, by that passage.

It may be that for this purpose, and to defend the planta-

tions against the uprising of slaves of both kinds, they may build a small fort, with two or three small cannons served by from four to six men.

In this connection I have to inform Y. E. that fourteen years ago I saw a Protection or Patent executed in Latin by the then Governor of Esquivo to a Carib Captain living within the Orinoco river.

Enquiring, in this connection, the grounds of the Governor of Esquivo for granting such Protection, I learned, and was afterwards assured, that the States-General in their Patents to the Governors of Esquivo add the title of Governors of Orinoco.

The fact is that these Governors call themselves Governors of Esquivo and Orinoco in the licenses they issue.

Tolerated now on the Maruca, they will next pass on to Barima, which empties into the same mouth, and later on they will come to the Aquire river, whose mouth is on the Orinoco itself, some leagues from the ocean. By this river the neighborhood of the Palmar Missions is reached, and by it they accomplish free communication with the other Missions in the interior of the country, as they have already done owing to the indifference of Father Friar Bruno, of Barcelona, who for this reason was removed therefrom by his Prefect, and reduced to serve as a companion in another Mission, and deprived of active or passive part in the meetings.

The request they make in writing of the Commandant of Guayana to allow their Aroacas, who come to fish turtle, to go further up, is not very much in keeping with their title of Governors of Esquivo and Orinoco, but still necessary to their advantage, and I am assured that the Commandant not only yields, but that his permits cover the different boats that go up for this purpose.

On such occasions Aroacas, Caribs, and Dutch come registered in order not to be molested. The latter are accustomed to land on the Caura river and other rivers to buy Indian slaves from the Caribs while the others fish for turtle. These fishermen also buy Indian slaves from our Caribs, and they all on the return take a large number of them.



God preserve Y. E. many years. Cabruta de Orinoco, December 15, 1757. Most Excellent Sir. Your humble servant kisses the hand of Y. E.

DON JOSEPH DE YTURRIAGA—[flourish].

Most Excellent Señor Don Ricardo Wal.

---

*Copy of letter.*

MY DEAR SIR: I inform Y. H. that I have performed the duty entrusted to me to reconnoitre the waters of the Moroca channel, and the fortification you were informed of, from which reconnaissance it results that the information is incorrect, for on the whole of that channel and the other channels communicating therewith there is no fortification to be found, and all there is is the news that the Dutch of the Esquivo Colony intend to move the guard which, under the name of post, they maintain on the Moroca channel, taking it down to the mouth thereof, emptying into the ocean, which will be about a distance of six leagues, for which purpose they have cut down trees and made many clearings for sowing that site, and built the houses necessary for the Aruaca Indians and the Dutch, which news I have been unable to verify with certainty, and I have only heard it said that the purpose is to prevent the negro slaves of the Company and residents of the said Colony from running away so easily to these Dominions, for the said guard being at the mouth of the Moroca, it can watch the boats that, without entering it, may pass by the coast to take the main mouth of this river.

The depth that the greater part of the above-mentioned river has is from two-and-a-half to three fathoms at its fullest, and entirely free from obstacles, as large feluccas and small schooners of ordinary draft navigate it with the assistance of the tides.

They are unable to say at said post whether the Frenchman Ygracio passed by there or not, as he could have gone by the sea-coast without entering the said Moroca channel, as the sloops do, as do also the canoes of the fugitive negroes and

soldiers. All of which I bring to the notice of Y. H. for your better information, and in compliance with what was entrusted to me.

God our Father preserve Y. H. many years. Guayana, December 2, 1757. Your most obedient and grateful servant kisses the hand of Y. H.

DON JUAN VALDES.

Señor Don José de Yturriaga.

It is a verbatim copy of the original which is in my possession.

DON JOSEPH DE YTURRIAGA.

---

They are copies agreeing with their originals existing in these General Archives of the Indias.—Case 131—Shelf 7—Bundle 17. Seville, April 10, 1891.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,  
Chief Librarian.

[SEAL.]

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias. Madrid, April 25, 1891.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XXIV.**

Case 130.—Shelf 4.—Bundle 9.

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIA.—(SEVILLE.)

---

1762.

---

**Letter from Don Jose Solano to the Knight Friar Don Julian de Arriaga, with an extract from four letters of Don Jose Yturriaga, and a report of the said Solano relating to matters regarding Guayana and the rights the Dutch claim in those Dominions.**

---

CADIZ, *March 23, 1762.*

---

1762.—Most Excellent Sir.

MY DEAR SIR: In the annexed representation I express to the King, through Y. E., my opinion and what occurs to me, being acquainted with the contents of the four letters of Rear-Admiral Don Joseph Yturriaga, dated in Cabrutta de Orinoco, on the twelfth and sixteenth days of June and fifteenth of December of fifty-seven, and the nineteenth of April of fifty-eight, which Y. E. was pleased to transmit to me by command of H. M. on the second of January of this year.

May Our Lord preserve you the many years the Monarchy wants and I need you. Cadiz, March 23, 1762. Most Excellent Sir. Your most obedient kisses Y. E.'s hand.

DON JOSEPH SOLANO—[a flourish].

Most Excellent Sir Knight Friar Don Julian de Arriaga.

(MARGINAL NOTE.—“Receipt, dated the 30th. I retain the report to examine it. H. E. returned it.”)

From the Secretary's private office Universal Department of State there have been transmitted to this Department of the Indias, with documents of September 9 and October 31, 1758, four letters which Don Joseph de Yturriaga, Rear-Admiral, wrote from the town of Cabruta, addressed to the Boundary Expedition on the Orinoco, their principal contents being as follows:

*First—of June 12, 1757.*

States that Don Vicente Doz and Don Nicolas Guerrero, having regained their health, he sent them to reconnoitre the Meta river up to the mouth of the Sarare, and to inform him also of the Barinas Missions under the charge of the Dominican Fathers of Santa Fe.

The letter accompanies an explanatory description of the investigations there made regarding the depth of the river and the condition of the Missions. Also a map of the trip over the river and the fathoms navigated, and Yturriaga adds that in order that the course of the river shall not be bare on its banks, there was added thereto, on the northern side, a work he did at another time, having now corrected it by these new investigations, as said maps showed.

That afterwards they desired to undertake some other work and Yturriaga would not consent, so that they might not lose their rather variable health by reason of the continuous rains there; and although all were without personal complaints, still very sensitive to any change of temperature. For which reason neither could any reconnaissance be made of other rivers of which Don Eugenio Albarado and Don Ygnacio Milhau had advised him, sending some pieces of bark called cinnamon, the fruit and leaves; and he awaited an opportune time to go and investigate those trees and treat their bark as he understood the Dutch treated that of the cinnamon trees; and finally, should the experiments not produce results, he would make others that might lead to success.

The said description gives minute statements of the depth and features of the Apure river, whose principal mouth is three leagues distant from Cabruta; that its lowest water was

found to be  $3\frac{1}{2}$  fathoms, and its width 80 *varas*, the same as the Guarico, and it adds the other rivers forming this, and the places in its neighborhood, towns, inhabitants, etc., expressing the Dominican Fathers and the curates assisting them, who founded those Missions forty-three years ago.

NOTE.—No antecedent is to be found in the secret archives of the Secretary's office to give rise to this report of Yturriaga, which must have been made pursuant to the instructions which he states were given him by Don Joseph Carvajal.

*Second Letter—of June 16, 1757.*

In this letter he answers one of the chapters of the confidential instruction given him by Don Joseph Carvajal, which treats principally of whether the Castle or Fort of Araya should remain or be demolished, which subject (which has been ventilated for a long time past, and on which there are several reports) is put in a separate extract following this, as it is necessary to look up the antecedents. The opinion of Yturriaga being in this report that it should be demolished, as it serves no useful purpose whatever in its present location.

*Third—of December 15, 1757.*

In this, his personal communication, he reports that having understood from the Capuchin Fathers of Guayana that the Dutch were constructing a new fort on the Maruca river, to windward and a short distance from the *Boca de Navios* of the Orinoco, and being persuaded that the Commandant of Guayana would not of his own motion take any measures to investigate the attempt, he ordered the sending of a launch to investigate the progress of the building, its dimensions, artillery, etc.

To this the Governor of Guayana, Don Juan Valdes, replied, in a letter dated the 2d of the said month, that there was no such fortification at the place mentioned, nor at any other place in the vicinity; and that the only news was that the Dutch from the Esquivo Colony intended to transfer the Guard, which under the name of Post, they maintain on the said Moroca Channel by removing it to the mouth where it empties into the ocean, about 6 leagues lower down, having cut down

trees and made many clearings for the purpose, and put up houses necessary for the Aruaca Indians and Dutch; which news he is not able to verify with certainty, and that he had only heard it said that the intent was to prevent the negro slaves of the Company, and the residents of the Colony from easily running away to those dominions.

Yturriaga understands from this report that what is intended is to establish some sugar plantations, adding to their owners and slaves a number of Aruaca Indians, who enjoy their greatest confidence, to prevent the passage thereby of deserters, soldiers and slaves, Indians and negroes, and that, perhaps to protect the plantations from an uprising of both kinds of slaves, they will build a small fort with two or three cannons to be served by four or six men.

In this connection he says, that about fourteen years ago, he saw a Protection or Patent executed in Latin by the Governor of Esquivo to a Carib Captain living within the Orinoco river line. That this caused him to inquire into the grounds upon which the Governor of Esquivo granted such Protection, and he learned that the States-General in their Patents to the Governors of Esquivo add to them the title of Governors of Orinoco; and that the truth is that these Governors call themselves in the licenses they issue Governors of Esquivo and Orinoco.

That if tolerated now in Muruca they will go next to Barima, and later on will come to the Aquire river, whose mouth is on the said Orinoco some leagues distant from the ocean. That by this river the neighborhood of the Palmar Missions is reached, and that by means of it they will gain communication with the other nations in the interior of the country, as they had already done, owing to the indifference of Father Friar Bruno, of Barcelona, although for this cause he was removed therefrom by his Prefect and reduced to serve as companion in another Mission, being deprived of active or passive part in the meetings.

He adds that the written request they make to allow their Aroacas, who come for the purpose of turtle fishing, to go further up does not harmonize very well with the title of

Governors of Esquivo and Orinoco, but still necessary to their advantage. The contents of the letter are principally confined to this.

*The Fourth, which is dated April 19, 1758.*

The subject of the foregoing letter is continued, and by reason of new questions put by Yturriaga to the Governor of Guayana, the latter says to him that the reported transfer of the Guard by the Dutch of the Esquivo Colony had not taken place, and that the only change was a house 15 *varas* in length which they built on the mouth emptying into the sea, and which they say is to serve for travellers who trade with the said colony in the intermissions of time caused by the low and high water on the river, the said Guard remaining, therefore, without increase of men or artillery ; and that the said Aroaca Indians located at this place for their trade are in three divisions of a settlement, each of from 10 to 12 small houses occupied by an Indian family, and distant a league or more one from the other, following the neighborhood of the banks of said Moruco River.

And Yturriaga only adds to this report that the Esquibo people published and maintain that the extent of the Dominion of the States-General reaches to the *Boca de Navios*, or main mouth of the Orinoco, and their fishermen even enter well inside the same to enjoy considerable profit, impelled by the total absence of meat in their land, and great scarcity of fish in their river.

---

These four letters having been transmitted for report to Naval Captain Don Joseph Solano, he agrees that the fortification of Araya is useless (which matter is settled), and that the notices regarding the condition of the Indian towns of Varinas furnished by the Naval Lieutenants Don Vicente Doz and Don Nicolas Guerrero are correct.

As regards the contents of the third and fourth letters of Yturriaga, relating to the pretensions of the Dutch of the Esquibo river to the Orinoco, he does not see upon what they can

be founded unless it be the peace in which the Commandants of Guayana have allowed them to fish in the *Boca de Navios* and the Barima and Aquire rivers, and to extend their navigation as far as Guayana. That thus they bring their jurisdiction near to the main mouth of the Orinoco, and introduce themselves into Barcelona, Caracas, and Varinas, and had not the escort and garrison of Guayana assisted the Reverend missionaries would not have been able to maintain themselves.

That the location of the Fort of San Francisco of Asis, and that of the small forts of San Diego and Limones, the only fortification of Guayana and Orinoco, is advantageous for the protection of that Province, its rear being defended by the desert, and as it is the key to that great river, and the defence of the rear of Cumaná, Caracas, and Varinas; but Solano thinks that the situation of these forts renders useless the greater part of their value in their own mutual defence, for the reasons he sets forth.

These reasons are limited to giving a description of the situation of the Province of Guayana, its rivers, latitude and longitude, and the garrisons of its castles and forts, and the ease with which it could be assaulted by a *coup de main*, and the Padrastro be lost, with which can not be defended either the Castle, the Limones fort, or the Province. The Orinoco would be opened, and the rear of Cumaná, Caracas, Varinas, and even Santa Fe, would be exposed without there remaining any forces there to arrest the advance of the enemy, nor would the forces that might come from neighbors have boats and supplies to cross over to the place. But that if the city were located 34 leagues above the castle, at Angostura, where the Orinoco narrows down to 800 *varas*, the troops would have another post where they could reorganize, they could arrest the advance of the enemy, and, larger forces gathered there, they could go down to dislodge him, preserve the settlement, increase and assist the troops of the forts, and the escort of the Missions, adding to the 100 men at Guayana those of the Jesuits of Orinoco and Dominicans of Varinas, and that the Commandant entrusted with the preservation of those dominions would have these additional troops to assist him, and could,



should it be necessary, mobilize his detachments, and increase his forces by those of the Indians which each could take from his respective department.

That with 73 men of the escort added to the 100 apportioned to Guayana and the 21 at the Limones port, he thinks no more troops are needed for the present to guard that port and protect the Missions; but he does think there should be an officer, honorable, zealous, and diligent, with some knowledge of fortifications, in order that without delay he may fortify the two plains lying before the east and west forts of the Padrastro fort with a strong stockade, and fascine and earth breastworks, and flank the castle from the western plain with four heavy guns, the northern front of the fort and the pass between the lagoons with light artillery. To defend the rise from the Baratillo to the fort, defending the western front with a second stockade. To raise the ramparts on their curtain and place thereon three 6-pounders, and in order that they may have sufficient play, to raze the tower in the middle of the fort, and on its parapet to erect four pillars four feet in height, and to place above them a tile roof to cover the Plaza de Armas, so that it may garrison the troops. Which said defences of the Padrastro are also defences of the castle and of the river pass, with the fire of the fort at Limones, and he finds that these are sufficient if the principal fort is constructed of durable material, leaving in the old castle some cannons as a leveling battery.

That this measure be strengthened by Y. M. erecting into a Government the Military District of Orinoco, because of its present importance; that the city be transferred to Angostura, and the Indian towns in the vicinity of the present site thereof to a more healthy place; that the latter and the residents of Guayana withdraw their cattle in order that the Dutch Colony of Esquivo may not have fresh meat nor mules for their sugar mills. That Guayana being located at Angostura the illicit trade would cease, owing to the obstacle of the guns of the castle and Limones fort, and its continuance would be rendered impossible if the garrison had two armed launches to relieve each other in patrolling and to aid each other; but

that to provide for patrolling where the city is now is useless, as it is not necessary to come within sight of the forts, and the smuggler can pass unseen if there be any one to help him on land. The allowance could thus be carried; the hides on the banks of the Orinoco could be collected, and also the tobacco and cacaos of Varinas, and not a little from Caracas; so many people would not perish by reason of the bad climate of Guayana, by transferring it to Angostura; the Governor can go there at all times to any part of his Province, that of Caracas and Cumaná; he can defend the city with six small cannons; the narrow passage will be closed, and the Dutch will be prevented from going up the Caura to buy slaves from the Caribs, to furnish them arms, and cultivate hatred for the Spanish, together with other advantages which would result from this measure, and which he sets forth in detail.

"This is settled in the measure determined on to move the town to Angostura, and the other orders issued to that end. In case any other measure should offer itself, let this record be preserved, together with that of the orders issued."

---

It is a copy agreeing with the original existing in the General Archives of the Indias in Case 130, Shelf 4, Bundle 9. Seville, March 21, 1891.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,

[SEAL.]

Chief Librarian.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jiménez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias.

Madrid, April 6, 1891.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XXV.**

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIAS.

Case 152.—Shelf 4.—Bundle 16.

---

**No. 1.**

---

**1676.—Report of the Council of War of the Indias regarding the Colony which the Dutch endeavored to establish between the Orinoco and the Amazon.**

---

Count de Medellin, Duke de San German, Marquis de Hontiveros, Don Balthazar Pantoja, Don Antonio de Castro, Don Joseph Ponce, Don Bernave Ochoa, Conde de Paredes.

SIR: Manuel de Belmonte, transmitted to me, Count de Medellin, with a letter dated the 17th of February last (which I received in the last mail from Flanders), the enclosed paper in which he announces that the States of the Provinces of Holland and Westfriesland determined to establish a Colony on the coast of the mainland at Cape Orange between Surinamte and the Amazon river, where they hold the greater part of the coast from Trinidad to this river, with settlements in Barbiche, Sequiebes, and Surinamtes; and that in order to cultivate this new Colony better than the previous ones, the matter will be assumed by the cities of Amsterdam, Leyden, Harlem, and Rotterdam furnishing one hundred colonists, each of whom bind themselves to take ten man-servants and two maid-servants, and in four years a like number, by which means they have 2,600 persons, without counting those procreated and coming from other places; and that to encourage them they grant them many privileges in the way of hereditary judicial offices, not having to pay duties in ten years, and other exemptions, and those from Holland bind

themselves to maintain and have a sufficient garrison in two forts they are to build at their expense; together with other proper conditions.

And he says that in order to give a start to this there were ready in the port of Amsterdam seven war frigates, three carrying 54 guns and the others from 36 to 40 guns; three tenders of 12 guns, and other vessels, which will set sail about the month of April of this year, carrying the colonists, their people, and 300 soldiers for the garrisons, and the rest necessary to establish themselves; and that they are going with the intention of endeavoring to take possession of the Island of Cayenne, which is near the coast of the mainland, and owned by the French, having been taken through conquest from the Dutch, which, it is believed, they will do with little resistance. He also says that Jacob Bimques goes as commander of the squadron, already in the understanding that on arriving off the coast of the mainland he is to remain with four frigates, and that Pedro Constante is to sail with three and the tenders to attempt an engagement off the Windward Island, possessed by the French; and that in one of the tenders the Corsair Erasmus goes, known as the man who in a small frigate stole the Island of Granada, which belongs to the French; and that Pedro Constante has great intelligence and knowledge of those localities, as he was Governor of the Island of Tabago, and was on the Tortuga Islands when the inhabitants mutinied against their Governor, Angeron. And Manuel Belmonte proposes that this is the best occasion to eject the buccaneers and French from the northern point of the Islands of Santo Domingo and Tortugas, and although these ask so large a sum to leave they can be brought to better terms, and no delays should intervene, for if peace continues that thorn will remain, which, together with that of Jamaica, will be the ruin of everything.

The said paper having been considered in the Council of War, it has been thought best to place it in the Royal hands of Y. M., stating that Don Manuel de Lira gave information of another proposition of the Dutch States, offering to go with naval forces to dislodge the French from the settlements they have on the windward coast, destroying the fortifications they

might have without the Dutch being able to settle in the same posts, nor reap any more profit than to take the negroes and other property and treasure the French may possess, of which I, Count de Medellin, gave information to Y. M. But (according to the contents of the paper of Manuel de Belmonte) what the Dutch now wish to attempt is more positive; since the purpose is to increase settlements in the Indias, carrying people and everything else necessary to accomplish it, and extend the same on the coasts of the mainland to gain a better hold on the commerce, to the serious damage and injury of the inhabitants of these ports, and the evident risk of losing the Indians by reason of the many settlements the nations of the north have made in those Provinces, without there being any other remedy thereto than the reorganization of the Windward Armada, that it may go where necessity may most demand. And therefore the Council finds itself called upon to lay it before Y. M. in order that you may be pleased to apply the necessary measures that may be at your disposal, with all due haste. And that the proper office write to or give the States-General to understand the feeling that would be aroused if they proceed to make new settlements in the Indias without giving notice to Y. M., when this is of such serious prejudice to the Royal Crown; for, although the Island of Curaçao is so small and barren, notorious inconveniences arise from its being held by the Dutch.

Your Majesty will determine what best accords with your service. Madrid, March 19, 1676. [There are five flourishes.]

On the reverse of this document is endorsed :

"The organization of the Windward Armada being of the great importance that the Council represents, and it is recognized, I charge it, in obedience to what I have determined, to give its greatest care to furthering the execution thereof and to accomplishing the necessary measures to this end; and in view of the season of the year it is not convenient at this time to make the proposed complaint to the States-General of the United Provinces." [There is a flourish.]

The document copied is accompanied by the paper following :

"**MOST EXCELLENT SIR :** The States of the Province of Holland and Westfriesland determined to establish a colony on the coast of the mainland at Cape Orange, between Surinante and the Amazon river, in order to hold the greater part of the coast from Trinidad to the Amazon river, for they already have the settlements in Barbiche, Sequiebes, and Surinantes, and in order that this may be better cultivated and employed than the other three, which can scarcely sustain themselves, the cities of Amsterdam, Leyden, Harlem, and Rotterdam have taken the matter in charge and have made an agreement with 100 colonists who bind themselves to each take ten men-servants and two maid-servants, and in four years another like number, whereby they will have 2,600 persons without counting those they may procreate and additions from other parts. And to encourage them they grant them many privileges in the way of hereditary judicial offices, non-payment of duties for ten years, and other exemptions, and those from Holland bind themselves to maintain them and keep a sufficient garrison in two forts they will build at their expense, together with other conditions in the premises.

"To begin this undertaking there are in the port of Amsterdam now ready 7 war-frigates, 3 of fifty-four guns, and the rest of from thirty-six to forty guns ; 3 tenders of twelve guns, and other vessels, which will set sail in April of this year 1676, carrying the colonists, their people, and 300 soldiers for the garrisons, and the other necessities to establish themselves. And they go with the intention of taking possession of the Island of Cayenne, near the coast of the mainland, possessed by the French and taken through conquest from the Dutch in years past, which, it is understood, they will accomplish with little resistance.

"Jacob Binques goes as commander of the squadron, and I have understood that on reaching the coast of the mainland he will remain with four frigates, and that Pedro Constante, with three and the tenders, will go to attempt an engagement near the Windward Islands, owned by the French in America. And on one of the tenders is the Corsair Erasmus, who is

known with a small frigate to have stolen the Island of Granada, which belongs to the French ; and Constante is one who best knows and is acquainted with those localities. He was formerly Governor of the Island of Tobago, and was on the Tortuga Islands when the inhabitants mutinied against their Governor, Angeron, as they did not wish to let him trade.

"I do not dwell upon this matter, as Señor Don Manuel de Lira must have done so by the last mail in the letter for H. M., and Y. E. may bear in mind that this is the best occasion to eject the buccaneers and French from the northern point of the Island of Santo Domingo and the Tortuga Islands, and although these ask so large a sum to leave, they may be brought to better terms, and this is no time to admit of delays ; for, if peace continues, we would remain with those thorns which, together with the Island of Jamaica, is the ruin of everything." (On the margin appears): " With letter of February 17, 1676."

---

It is a copy of the original document existing in the General Archives of the Indias, Case 152, Shelf 4, Bundle 16.

[SEAL.]

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,  
Chief Librarian.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias. Madrid, April 6, 1891.

P. FOURTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

## No. XXVI.

GENERAL CENTRAL ARCHIVES

Ministry of State, Bundle 2499.

---

**Description of the Lands of Orinoco, Method of Preserving them, etc. (Correspondence of Yturriaga, 1747.)**


---

The city of Santo Thomé de la Guayana, the only Spanish town on the Orinoco river, is composed of sixty negro, mulatto, and *zambo* \* residents, and a few whites. They and their women are all indolent, content with some poor huts for dwellings, with fishing, and with the rum they make from the sugar cane left over after satisfying their love of sweet things. It is situated on the southern bank of the lower river, within gun-shot of a small fort called San Francisco de Asis, erected on a rock bathed by the same river. For the pay of its garrison there is deposited in Santa Fe de Bogota the amount for one hundred files, at the rate of ten *escudos* per month, which aggregates fifteen thousand *pésos*. From the one hundred files, fourteen are deducted to contribute to the pay of the Castellan, lieutenant, cornet, and two sergeants of the company; twelve of which are detached on the Island of Trinidad, forming its garrison; five, eight, or twelve in the Missions of the same Province under the charge of the Catalanian Capuchin Fathers; and ten for the escort of the Supercargo, who goes every year to Santa Fe in search of the allowance. Deducting further some files absent, some ill, and others on leave, that garrison should be considered as having only fifty files.

The small number of soldiers and residents, and the character thereof—who, withdrawing to the Missions of the interior, leave nothing in their huts and camps to lose—gave cause for

---

\* The offspring of a mulatto and negro.—*Translator*.



the audacity of an Irishman, who, at the beginning of the last war, proceeded with sixty sailors in a brigantine to the conquest of Guayana, and, in fact, accomplished it. He took possession of the fort, carried off some guns, spiked and threw others into the river, burned the city and two missionary settlements, nettled because he found nothing to sack.

Three leagues below the city that great river divides itself into three large branches. Two of these, which bend to the north and northeast, separate into so many channels that they empty into the sea through more than forty mouths. The third, which bends to the east, flows almost whole for fifty leagues until it empties into the sea under the name of ship channel (*boca grande de Navios*), because it is only through this that small vessels of six guns can go up.

Following the large branch in its course to the sea, some rivers are encountered which empty on the right hand, like that named the Aquire, and a branch of the Barema river, which separates into many other branches, the great windward point forming a labyrinth of islands and channels. Through these channels, without going out to sea, one can go in canoes up to the stronghold called the Post, which the Dutch of Esquibo maintain with three men and two small cannons, sixteen leagues from the Colony towards the ship channel, and this is the way taken by the Dutch when they return from the Orinoco in small vessels, in order not to expose themselves to the strong currents and winds which retard and render dangerous the navigation outside.

From the Missions of Guayana, under charge of the Catalan Capuchin Fathers, there has undoubtedly been opened a road to or communication with Esquibo, because the Governor of Cumaná, Don Gregorio Espinosa de los Monteros, received a letter from the Governor of Esquibo by hand of the Prefect of those Missions, and this Prelate was not reluctant to assume charge of the reply. The Caribs, which live within the Orinoco line, occupy about seventy leagues of the southern bank from the mouth of the Caroni, distant six leagues to the west of Guayana, up to the mouth of the Caura river. Their audacity and superiority over other nations keeps them inco

stant action against the latter, however distant they be, to the end of making them slaves and selling them to the residents of the Dutch Colonies of Esquibo, Berbice, Corentin and Surinam. For this trip they have, besides the navigation of the Orinoco and the channels of the Barima, a road on land which, crossing the Caroni above the Guajana Missions, reaches the Aquire river, and they go down by this river to near its mouth, when they act in concert with some vessel, which waits on this river, and when not, they enter the Yuruari and follow it down to the Esquibo.

From the mouth of the Caura from twenty to twenty-five leagues have to be navigated, with no settled places on either bank, to reach the first Mission of the Jesuit Fathers, called San Ygnacio de Cabruta, and as the Caribs hold sway over the ninety and more leagues reckoned from the mouth of the Caroni, the navigation is very dangerous to such as are not their friends, or do not carry sufficient force to guard against an attack. The many attacks on the Missions, their desolation and destruction are proofs of the hatred with which they look upon them; and with this knowledge the Fathers find themselves obliged to keep a continual watch with the aid of an escort and a few small cannon and muskets. But it is seen from experience that these means are insufficient for the peace necessary to their increase. The threats of the Caribs, which some Indians fear; their persuasions, which move others; and the licentious life of the forest, which appeals to all the recently settled, are also causes of the sudden desertions which have been suffered. And with all this, such is the constant application of the Fathers, that after the third time they entered the Orinoco country they have been enabled to found and maintain five settlements from San Ygnacio de Cabruta to the Atures rapids, a distance of eight days of navigation.

After the giant and high-spirited Guipanovis destroyed, in the year seventeen hundred and forty-seven, the new Mission on the said rapids, the Fathers rebuilt it, albeit at the expense of great fatigues, congregating some Maipure and Pareca Indians; and they maintain the post with as much care as Cabruta, as the two are the most exposed — Cabruta to the

attacks of the Caribs, and the Atures rapids to those that flee from the Guipánovis, which inhabit the Atabapu Channel, distant seven days' navigation from the rapids. The Guipánovis are customarily accompanied by their friends, the Civitenes, from the upper part of the Negro river, where there is land communication of a half days' journey from Atabapu. These two nations manage fire-arms with great skill, so much so that Captain Macapu alone, with eighty of his fusileers, destroyed the Mission of the rapids, and having been pursued on this occasion by the escort with other Spaniards and more than three hundred Indians, they did not venture to attack him in his settlement, knowing that he has it well fortified. The original plan which is annexed, drawn on the spot by Brother Vera of those Missions, shows the fortification.

In order that the evils set forth may not go on increasing, it is expedient to apply the remedy at once. And if one could be found that will not only put an end to their advance, but bring about some benefits, so much the better. Settlement is presumed to be such a remedy.

Thereby Guayana will be freed from new assaults of corsairs, it can change its residents to improve their character, its fort will not need such a large garrison, nor will the latter have to look to Santa Fe for its pay, for the settlements will furnish this expense, saving the fifteen thousand *pesos* it now costs the King; aliens and Caribs will be prevented from entering and leaving the river, and from mutually trading; the Missions of the Orinoco will be protected from the Caribs and the Guipánovis; the trade in different commodities which do not now leave those localities will be encouraged and increased; the navigation of the Orinoco River, and of other rivers emptying into it, will be made free, which can increase considerably the trade of the Vice-Royalty of Santa Fe. The large number which, spread out over the land, live hidden from the Ministers of the King and the Church, will be brought to civil and Christian life, and the Indians of the forest, who, lacking the teachings of the Gospel, and filled with thousands of exasperating feelings against the Spaniards, resist their companionship, will be subjugated; the Royal Treasury will be added to,

and there will be retained in the hands of Spaniards a great part of the money taken from the Kingdom by aliens, by the sale of many products of Spanish-America, and of others, which could be done in a very short time.

A copy:

RAMÓN SANTA MARÍA,  
Secretary.

Correct:

[SEAL.]

M. VELASCO Y SANTOS, Chief.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela, in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signatures of Señores M. Velasco y Santos and Ramón Santa María, Chief and Secretary, respectively, of the General Central Archives of Alcala de Henares.

Madrid, December 30, 1890.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Foutoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6th, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XXVII.****Report on the boundaries of Cumana and Guayana and the right claimed by the Dutch to the fisheries at the mouth of the Orinoco.**


---

The Governor of Cumaná, Don Joseph Ramirez de Arellana, having reported in a letter of the 27th of March of seventeen hundred and five that the French of Martinique have introduced themselves to trade on the Guarapichi river, not only in woods, hammocks, birds, and other commodities, but even in Indian slaves of the said river and the coast of the mainland, considering them better than the negroes for work, endeavoring to gild these insults with the pretext that because those shores were not populated by Spaniards their inhabitants should be considered as savages of an unconquered land, open to the trade of the French, the Council advised His Majesty, on the sixth of October of the same year, of the injuries that might grow out of consenting to these acts contrary to the law of Nations and to the bonds and amity of both Crowns. For even though the banks of the Guarapichi were not populated by Spaniards, as they are very near the Island of Trinidad and the Province of Cumaná, the dominion and possession of those territories so legitimately acquired by His Majesty continued firm, and the Indians inhabiting the same should enjoy the benefit of his Royal protection. The Pontifical Bulls, which granted His Majesty dominion over America, conditioned upon his propagating the faith and maintaining the Evangelical workers, moreover prohibited all manner of persons, States, dignities, either Royal or Imperial, under pain of absolute excommunication, from going to the Indias upon any pretext without the express Royal consent of His Majesty, which prohibition was included in the law itself; for the principal object being to wean the Indians from the errors of heathenism, no advance could be made in this undertaking, by allowing trade with aliens, as was evidenced by the

experience with the natives of Orinoco and the mainland, when, despite the efforts of the missionaries and the large sums spent in their subjugation from the year fifteen hundred and twenty-nine, nothing had been accomplished, as the cunning and ferocious Indians had given themselves over to treating with foreigners; under which supposition, and that the interests of both Crowns were as single and reciprocal as the trade of the French of Martinique was reprehensible—especially in the slavery of the Indians—it became advisable for His Majesty to be pleased to command that the proper communications, couched in the most efficacious terms, with the Most Christian King, be sent to the end that he cause the trade to be prohibited under the strictest penalties by issuing the proper orders to the Governor of Martinique and the other officials of the settlements occupied by the French. Pursuant to this advice His Majesty was pleased to determine the following: “The Ambassador of the King, my Grandfather, has been entrusted with apprising him of these matters and with sending to me the orders that may have been issued in France in the premises.”

2. The repeated abuses committed by the Carib Indians established on the many islands formed by the Orinoco at its mouth, who, aided by the Dutch, would go to the upper part of the narrows (Angostura) to make prisoners of the Aruro Indians, at times to eat them, and at others to sell them as slaves to the French, English and Dutch, gave rise to the proposition (in the year sixteen hundred and ninety-four, when the Governor of Trinidad, Don Francisco de Meneses, and the Prefect and Procurator of those Capuchin Missions made known the discovery of the headwaters of the Orinoco), to construct a fort on its banks to restrain the audacity of the Caribs, as well as to prevent the entrance of foreign nations. And in fact an order was issued on the twenty-fourth of August, sixteen hundred and ninety-seven, to the President of Santa Fe, to have it built on the site and in the manner that might be deemed most convenient. But this measure was not carried out at the time, owing to negligence at Santa Fe; nor was it done for many years, notwithstanding the

many plans and propositions of different subjects who offered to carry it into execution, and concerning which the Council held repeated consultations, because of the difficulties presented by the selection of the site, up to the year seventeen hundred and fifty-two, when, pursuant to the advice of April tenth, His Majesty gave notice that he had issued commands to construct the said fort, and to ship artillery.

3. Besides the foregoing, and to prove the dominion of His Majesty over the lands of Orinoco, it must be remembered that in a letter transmitted to the Council by the Governor of Cumaná, Don Gregorio Espinosa, under date of February first, seventeen hundred and forty-two, accompanied by the two edicts relating to the demarcation and delineation of jurisdiction of the Government (Cumaná) with that of Venezuela, there were designated as the uttermost lines thereof: On the seacoast, Cape Quadera, and thence, running east, crossing the Santa Lucia mountains, to the headwaters of the Orinoco river, and following this waterway to the plains to where it enters the Guarico river; thence down to where it joins the Orinoco, following the latter to the sea.

4. In the geographical description, and the notes added for an easier understanding of the general map of the said Government of Cumaná, transmitted by its Governor, Don Joseph Diguja, in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-one, it is also recorded that the boundaries of that Province on the east are the mouths of the Orinoco, the Guarapichi river, and Point Paria; on the north the same point, Cape Tres Puntas, following the coast of Araya and Gulf of Cariaco, till it strikes the town of Pozuelos, which is now of the Province of Barcelona; on the west, from said town to the Guanipa tableland, whence it again runs to the east until it strikes the Orinoco opposite Guayana.

5. That this Province of Guayana has as boundaries: On the east, all the coast on which are situated the Dutch colonies of Esquivo, Bervis, Demerari, Corentin, and Surinama; and further to windward, Cayenne, belonging to the French; on the north, the banks of the Orinoco, which, separating the Provinces of Cumaná, Barcelona, Caracas, Barimas, Santa Fe

and Popayan, forms a half circle, running back east to seek its headwaters in Parima Lake; on the south, the dominions of the Most Faithful King in Brazil, the confines of the latter, and the said Province of Guayana being unknown, as also what the latter contains in the centre. And speaking of the Orinoco, Caroni, Arui, and Caura rivers, it is also stated that forty leagues from Arui the one called Caura empties, which is the largest, flowing between great rocks which impede the navigation of all vessels save canoes or small launches. That the source of the latter is found sixty leagues above its mouth, taking its first waters on a high range of hills inhabited by many Indians, harassed by the Caribs who pursue them to capture and sell them to the Dutch. That on the east and coast of Guayana are situated the Dutch Colonies of Esquibo, Demerari, Bervis, Corentin, and Surinam, according to the information secured by Don Juan de Dios Valdes, Commandant of Guayana. That the Colony of Esquibo consisted of sugar plantations, which for the distance of thirty leagues the Dutch had established on the banks of the Esquibo river. And, finally, that the Dutch establishments were most prejudicial to Guayana, especially that of Esquibo, because through the nearness of the Orinoco, they went to the interior by this river, the Mazaroni and Cuyuní, protected by the Caribs, to pillage and capture the Indians of the former Province, frequently disturbing by their forays the Missions of the Catalan Capuchins, whose cowardly and pusillanimous Indians took to the forest on the slightest news of Caribs.

6. Notwithstanding these constant acts, in the year seventeen hundred and nine the Ambassador of Holland appeared, complaining of the proceedings of the Spaniards established on the Orinoco, against the Dutch colony of Esquibo; presenting, in support of his complaint, a memorial referring to several letters of Lorenzo Horn, and S. Gravesand, Director-General of the said colony, in which, supposing that from time immemorial the Republic of Holland was in possession not only of the Esquibo river, and of many other rivers and streams emptying into the sea along this portion of the coast, but also of all the branches and rivulets emptying into the



former, particularly the northern one called Cayoeni, or Cuyuni, on whose bank, considered as dominion of the State, they have maintained a wooden cabin, guarded by a small vessel manned by some slaves and Indians, he set forth that a Spanish detachment, coming from the Orinoco, had attacked that post and taken many Indians, threatening to return at the first ebb and visit another branch of the same river, called the Maseroni, which lies between it and the Cuyuni, and composed part of the territory of the Republic. That although Gravesand had taken all this as simple threats which would not be executed, he learned afterwards that the Spaniards had constructed two cabins, guarded by many troops, and one of them very near to the cabin on the Cuyuni river, and had begun to take the Indians on the Maroca, taking possession of the rivulet a half day's journey from the Weyne, between it and the Pomaron, where the Company had had from time immemorial a trading place belonging, beyond contradiction, to the territory of the Republic. That, moreover, they had committed other assaults, among them that of having caused to be killed the guard of the Arinda cabin, belonging to its Company, situated near the source of the Esquibo, as well as all the Caribs in the neighborhood; and although the Company had taken steps to oppose such undertakings, it thought it ought not to fail to notify the Republic, and engage its attention, to the end that it might remonstrate against such manifest wrongs of the State; adding that the Spaniards had commenced some time back to dispute their right to fish at the mouth of the Orinoco, and in the stretch of territory between the Marewigni river and the further side of the Wayne, belonging to the State, as could be seen by the geographic charts, especially that of Señor Auville, one of the most esteemed, owing to its accuracy; and that they had been disturbed in their fishing by force, notwithstanding the long time they had enjoyed it quietly and peacefully, and that it was of great profit to them by reason of the abundance of fish to be found there; and, finally, he stated that, in the face of all treaties, and even against the Law of Nations, the Spaniards, to the great prejudice of the planters, and even of the whole

colony, retained the slaves fleeing from the Dutch establishments, the most forcible arguments and commissions looking towards their return to their owners not sufficing.

7. By Royal command of the tenth of September of the said year of seventeen hundred and sixty-nine, Sir Knight Friar Don Julian de Arriaga transmitted this memorial to the Council, to the end that with all possible haste it should advise what it might deem proper with regard to the extent of those boundaries and the right the Republic of Holland claimed to the fisheries at the entrance of the Orinoco.

8. This question having been referred to the Attorney General with the antecedents he missed some documents referring to the case, and, among others, four letters of Rear-Admiral Don Joseph de Yturriaga, detailed on the Orinoco boundary expedition, which it was said were received in the years seventeen hundred and fifty-seven and fifty-eight, and the report thereon made by Naval Captain Don Joseph Solano, as also the reply of the Most Christian King, or the measures that Court may have taken as a result of the official communications sent in the year seventeen hundred and fifty by reason of the transgressions committed by the French of Martinique on the Guarapiche river. All of which documents and others which might throw light on the matter were requested of the office of the Secret Archives through the advice given His Majesty by the Council on the twenty-second of October of the same year; and, in consequence, with an official communication of the twenty-second of September of seventeen hundred and seventy, Sir Knight Arriaga transmitted the said letters and report, with two other statements in which the Governors of Guayana and Cumaná, complying with what was ordered them in the Royal command of the twenty-seventh of September of seventeen hundred and sixty-nine, reported (justifying the same) upon the acts of which the Minister of Holland complained, and a letter from the Prefect of the Catalanian Capuchin Missions regarding what happened by reason of the ransom of three Indian women who, with their children, had been enslaved by the Dutch; the Sir Knight stating in his said official communication that the other papers wanting had been

requested of the office of the Secretary of State; but, not having been found therein, he advised His Majesty thereof in another communication dated the sixth of October following, so that in this intelligence the Council might proceed to the consideration of the record.

9. Yturriaga's letters were written in Cabruta de Orinoco on the twelfth and sixteenth of June, and the fifteenth of September of seventeen hundred and fifty-seven and the nineteenth of April of fifty-eight, and in the first thereof the said Commissioner gave a description of the Apure river, setting forth the condition of its missions, its settlements, inhabitants, etc.

10. The second relates to the tearing down of the Castle of Araya, stating that as it had been constructed to prevent the Dutch from taking advantage of a salt mine contiguous thereto, the latter having been lost and the Dutch having discovered others, it was no longer useful, and a great tax on the Crown.

11. The third stated that having understood that the Dutch were constructing a fort on the Maruca river, a short distance from the ship channel of the Orinoco, he had ordered that a launch be sent there to investigate the condition of the building, its size and artillery; and that, through a letter written him by Don Juan Valdes (a copy of which he enclosed), he had learned that the information was correct, and that there was no news save that the Dutch wished to move the Guard, which, under the name of Post, they maintained on the Maruca Channel, taking it down to the mouth entering into the sea at a distance of six leagues; and that to this end they had made many clearings for sowing, and built houses; and that, as was reported, the purpose was to prevent the desertion of their slaves to our dominions. Yturriaga added that from this report he inferred that they wished to establish some sugar plantations and add to their owners and slaves some Aroaca Indians, in whom they most confided, so as to prevent the passing of the deserters; and it might be that to this end, and to forestall any uprising among the slaves, they might wish to build a small fort with two or three light cannons, and with from four to six men. That the Dutch being allowed in Maruca, later perhaps they would pass over to the Barina,

which empties into the same mouth, and in time they would extend over to the Aquiri, whose mouth was in the Orinoco itself. That the Governor of Esquibo called himself, in his dispatches and passports, Governor of the Orinoco—a title hardly agreeable—but that it was profitable to them to have their Aroacas allowed to engage in the fishing of turtle, in which, as he had understood, there was much toleration on the part of the Commandant of Guayana, and even deference in granting licenses to many vessels which came up for the purpose of carrying Caribs and unknown Dutchmen who landed on the Caura river to buy Indian slaves.

12. Yturriaga's fourth letter was accompanied by a copy of the reply sent him by the Commandant of Guayana to nine questions propounded to him, and it appears therefrom that the transfer of the guard of which mention has been made was not carried into effect, but that a hut fifteen *varas* in length had been built at the mouth of the river emptying into the sea, as a shelter for parties going to their Colony between the rise and fall of the river; that the old Guard or Post was maintained at the same site without increase of troops or more artillery than three three-pound guns unmounted, and that the Aroaca Indians located at that place for the purpose of its trade composed a settlement of three divisions, each of ten or twelve small houses, distant from each other about one league, following the neighborhood of the Moruca seven leagues distant from the sea. And Yturriaga ended his letter stating that the Dutch of Esquibo published and maintained that the extent of the dominion of the States-General reached the ship channel or main mouth of the Orinoco, into which river their fishermen entered very far to enjoy its fisheries to an extent proportionate to the total lack of meat in their land and the great scarcity of fish in their river.

13. Naval Captain Don Joseph Solano, in his report on these letters, favored the demolition of the Castle of Araya, since, having no other purpose than the defence of the salt mine, and the English having been authorized by Article three of the Treaty of Munster to get salt on Tortuga Island, its continuance was no longer useful, especially as it did not protect any

essential part or impede foreign vessels from going to Cumaná and its coast, which place could not aid it in case of an invasion.

14. That the description of the Apure river agreed fully with the information he had, and that moreover he had found that the inhabitants of Barine, having experienced a decrease in the value of their tobacco in the Provinces of Caracas and Maracaibo owing to the increase in the crops of the latter, and that the price of theirs in the seaports barely met the expense of their grievous and protracted transit, opened to aliens the navigation of the Apure river, which empties into the Orinoco, so as to divide the difference therewith, and their introduction into the Province ruined the plantations and their owners, and depopulation would have followed had not the place the natives left been occupied by the surplus of the New Kingdom of Granada.

15. That notwithstanding the claims to Orinoco boasted by word of mouth by the Governors of Esquivo, based on the plea that the evidences of title given them by the Republic granted them this jurisdiction, he had not learned that they had made any demands growing out of the seizures from them by Trinidadians and Guayanese on the course of this river; nor had they dislodged them from the out-posts they had planted on the Cuyuni river to protect the parties that went into the interior of Guayana to buy Indian slaves, and much less could he understand upon what they could base them; for although by the fifth Article of the Treaty of Munster they were granted dominion over the countries, places, trading-posts and others they owned at that time in America, on the Orinoco, neither they nor any others save the Spanish had ever had up to the time or subsequently any place, fort, stronghold, encampment, hunting grounds, fisheries, or the enjoyment of its lands.

16. That they could not found such pretensions upon the tacit or express permission that the Commandants of Guayana and Orinoco may have at times given them to fish at the *Boca de Navios* and the Barima and Aquire rivers; on the huts they may have built to salt and dry their catch, nor on the navigation which may have been furtively allowed them as far as

Guayana or farther up; nor much less could they justify the Post or Guard they maintained at Moruca, since in the Treaty they are prohibited from erecting any new fortification under any pretext, and that the only thing they could allege was the silence or indifference with which the Commandants of Guayana had looked upon this usurpation, taking advantage thereof to extend their dominion to the main mouth of the Orinoco, and with easy navigation entering thereby, and by the Apure, Meta, and other rivers to the Provinces of Barcelona, Caracas, and Barinas, to the great prejudice of the Royal Treasury, the advancement of the Spanish population and the propagation of the gospel; for with the outer defence of that great river, and the aid which the Dutch interest furnished the Caribs, the latter turned a deaf ear to peace, disputed its navigation by the Spaniards, and its passage to the missionaries, basely advancing to the extent of taking the life of the holy fathers and of a great number of godless Indians; and they would have caused their total extermination had not the glorious predecessors of His Majesty succored them with escort troops, and the mediocre protection of the garrison and fort of Guayana. And Solano, coming down to the matter of proposing the forts that were needed to be established for the defence of the Orinoco and neighboring Provinces, their sites, and the troops that should garrison them, concluded his report by advancing the opinion that the military district of Guayana should be erected into a Government; that the city should be transferred to Angostura, and the neighboring settlements to a better climate, and that the residents of Guayana should withdraw their herds in order that the hunger of the enemy might aid our forces, and the securing of fresh meat and mules for their sugar mills be rendered difficult to the inhabitants of Esquibo; for in this way, concentrating the troops that were in Orinoco, Apure and Meta, the injurious invasion of the foreigners would be prevented, and the pious purposes of His Majesty would be accomplished.

17. The Commandant of Guayana, Don Manuel Centurion, in obedience to the said Royal command, sent, together with a letter dated April ninth of seventeen hundred and seventy-

eight, exemplified copies of the inquiries had regarding the acts complained of by the Director of Esquibo, stating, with reference to the results thereof, that they were all false charges through which Gravesand had endeavored to arouse the States-General against the proceedings of the Spaniards, erroneously supposing that the Dutch had ever been in possession of the rivers or rivulets that empty into the sea from the Esquibo to the Orinoco, because they had there no establishment other than a straw-thatched hut on the eastern bank of the Moruca, or Maroco, which had been tolerated for forty years back, intended to prevent the desertion of their slaves; which toleration degenerated soon into the iniquitous trade of buying from the cruel Caribs the Indians they enslaved, surprising the other nations subject to Spanish rule.

18. That neither were they in possession of the Maseroni and other rivers that emptied into the Esquibo on its southwestern bank, and it was expedient to disabuse them of this error upon which they founded their complaints; because the Esquibo flowing, approximately, parallel with the sea-coast from the vicinity of the Corentin until it emptied into the sea forty-five leagues east of the mouth of the Orinoco, all the rivers having their sources in the furthest interior of the Province of Guayana and flowing towards the coast lying between the mouths of the Corentin and Esquibo came in contact with the latter which crosses and assimilates them; so that if, as the Dutch supposed, the territory embraced by the rivers feeding the Esquibo (and they are the Cuyuni, Maseroni, Mao, Apanoni, Putara, and other minor ones, with their branches) belonged to the dominion of the Republic, they would have in the Province of Guayana more than the Spaniards; the case being, as appeared from the map he annexed, that the Dutch could only claim possession of the *Surinam, Cupernam, Corentim, Bervis, Demerara, Esquibo, and Fowaron rivers.*

19. That the detachment which Gravesand supposed to have attacked their establishments in the year sixty-nine, was undoubtedly a tale invented by the *Poytos*,\* agents which they have in those parts, offended because some savage Indians,

---

\* Indian Slaves were called *Poytos*.

Caribs as well as Guaycas, of those living in those regions, came to settle in our Missions; the fact being that no detachment had left Guayana for those rivers, and that during late years some Indians came from the forests lying between the Cuyuni and Maseroni, at the request of the Caribs, which for more than twenty years were established in our Missions to the number of five thousand, without it being known up to that date that this numerous nation was a dependency of the Dutch, or those forests, which had been the nursery of the Catalonian Capuchins of Guayana, were territory of the Republic.

20. That the two garrisoned cabins which Gravesand alleged were in the vicinity of his hut on the Cuyuni river, were two Indian settlements founded by the Capuchins on the bank of the Yuruari, and with no garrison other than one soldier in each as escort of the missionary; that the supposed proximity thereof to his hut was equally false, since they were more than seventy leagues of bad road removed therefrom.

21. That the taking of Indians from Moruca by the Spaniards consisted in that the Catalonian Capuchins having entered escorted, as was customary, by a launch from Orinoco to the Barima river in search of Indian deserters from their Missions, which were dispersed between the Guayne and Moruca (a territory contiguous to the Orinoco and never occupied by the Dutch) they reached the Moruca hut, the guard of which held in slavery three Indian women and their children, kidnapped from the mouth of the Orinoco, as they stated to the missionaries; and they brought these Indians to the Missions without doing any harm whatever to the Dutch; but rather, thinking to favor them, they had given them a certificate of the affair to satisfy the Director of Esquibo.

22. That the killing of the guard of the Arinda hut and the Caribs of the vicinity was a groundless charge, for that post was situated beyond our reach, and no news was even had of it.

23. That on the Cuyuni river, called by the Dutch, Cayoeni, the latter had no possession other than a plantation where it empties into the Esquibo; for, although in the year seventeen



hundred and fifty-seven they attempted to establish themselves fifteen or twenty leagues higher up, for the purpose of enslaving Indians through the Caribs, the Commandant of Guayana, being informed thereof, sent a detachment which dislodged them, burning the trading post, and bringing prisoners the Dutch, one negro, and some Caribs, with the instructions and original statements, which fully proved the infamous trade, which, by order of the Director of Esquibo, and to his vile interest, the Guard of the trading post carried on.

24. That the post which Gravesand stated the Spanish took possession of *near a rivulet south of the Guayne river*, where he supposed the company had from time immemorial a trading place depending beyond contradiction upon the Republic, must be, without doubt, the one which the intruding Dutchmen on the Guarima river abandoned in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-eight, so soon as they learned that our cruising launches were patrolling that river, one of the largest emptying into the Orinoco, notwithstanding that Gravesand made it out a *rivulet*, without venturing to name it, so as not to declare himself a usurper. It is equally strange that he should call this an *immemorial* establishment, when it had existed barely for two years.

25. That they had never up to that time disputed the right of the Dutch to the fisheries at the mouths of the Orinoco because they did not fish there, as is proved by the fact that, having armed during the last three years some cruising launches for this river, they had seized thirty-three foreign vessels, but none of them engaged in fishing, nor was there even any information that the Dutch were in possession of such fishing grounds; and he had only been able to find one instance of having come across and seized, in the year seventeen hundred and sixty-one, one small fishing schooner and two launches belonging to that nation, at the mouth of the Orinoco and the Barima river. But, nevertheless, it was thought that this pretended right, which would easily degenerate into a disgraceful illicit trade, difficult to stop and most injurious to our Provinces, should be denied.

26. And as regards the statement that the Spaniards retained the negro deserters from Esquibo, he stated that this had only been done with respect to those who were Indians or the negroes that came soliciting the benefits of the Catholic religion, since the others that had taken refuge to escape the vexations of ill treatment, or for other reasons, had been returned to their owners, or their value in silver had been given them, they being satisfied with the sale; although since Gravesand had appropriated two negroes who had escaped from Guayana, and sold them for his own benefit, he appeared to have contented himself with this reprisal, for since then he had not demanded those that had left his Colony.

27. And, finally, in satisfaction of the rest demanded of him through the said Royal command, to the effect that he state whatever he might see fit in the premises, he stated that as in every country the most necessary things are the sea coasts, and those of the vast Province of Guayana being occupied by the Dutch, without Spain being left anything but a point at the mouth of the Orinoco, to gain an outlet to the sea, we ought to direct our policy to the destruction of the Dutch colonies, beginning with that of Esquibo and following up with Demerari, Bervice, Corentin, up to Surinam, for which purpose he proposed two methods, to wit: That protection and liberty be given all the fugitive slaves from the said colonies, as was done in Caracas with those from Curazao; and that the said Province be garrisoned with a battalion of infantry to build on the frontiers and rivers that empty into the Esquibo the forts which even before being projected would frighten the Dutch, in order to embarrass thereby the usurpation of more territory than that which they now occupy, and the considerable extraction of Indians whereby, leaving our lands deserted, they greatly people and cultivate their own; for in this way facilitating the running away of the Indians and negroes they were enslaving, and rendering difficult their purchase of others by reason of the imminent risk of losing them, it was probable that they would soon decamp from our vicinity, seeing us formidable to take other measures.

28. The Governor of Cumaná, Don Pedro Joseph de Urrutia,

in his report of May tenth, of seventeen hundred and seventy, and two exemplified copies he sent therewith, adds no particulars to the statements of the Commandant of Guayana, save a letter that Gravesand wrote him on the thirtieth of September, of fifty eight, demanding the two Dutchmen, one negro slave and a *Grifa* who, with her children, was seized by the detachment which went over to the dislodgment on the Cuyuni river, which is mentioned under number twenty-three, and the reply he sent him denying his request; and also that the same Gravesand transmitted him in March of the same year a letter, and a box within which was a map, which he returned to him unopened with a letter in which he stated to him the general prohibition against the entrance of foreign vessels into those territories, and carrying on correspondence with its colonies; and that having understood that his object was to insist upon the demarcation of the lines within which the colony of Esquibo lay, he could not and ought not to receive the said letter and box, and was without authority to act in the matter.

29. The Prefect of the Missions, in the representation which under date of July sixth, of seventeen hundred and sixty, he addressed to the secret office, related the events of the entry made by the missionaries of the Barima river to ransom the fugitive Indians from their Missions, which is set forth under number twenty-one, going on to consider the injuries done to religion and the State by the Carib Indians aided by the Dutch, the overweening desire of the latter to acquire new localities in order to in time allege possession and raise much clamor that their boundaries be set.

All these documents, with many others annexed as antecedents, were sent to the then Attorney General, accompanied also by another record which had already been considered by His Majesty, ever since the ninth of May of seventeen hundred and sixty-eight, relating to an official communication from the Ambassador of England, referring to the return of the negroes passing from her islands to ours of America; and the former official having made known that the investigation and examination of such a mass of papers was a very long task, on which he must of necessity consume a great part of the time needed

to perform the other and important business of his office, the Council ordered by its resolution of the first of October of seventeen hundred and seventy-four, that it should all be referred to the Relator, Counsellor Canet, in order that he make a brief of all the matters in the record and its antecedents, which done, he should return it to the Attorney General for his opinion.

The matter remained in this condition up to the year seventeen hundred and eighty-five, when, the brief having been made by the Relator and the record returned to the Attorney General, Don Antonio Porlier, he stated in his reply of May twenty-seventh of the same year that at that time there was no action required, since, more than fifteen years having passed without any pressure being brought by the Minister of Holland in the premises, it was natural to believe that the Republic, better apprised of the want of just reasons for the demand it had made, had desisted therefrom. That moreover, the papers annexed to his memorial, principally the representation of the Commandant of Guayana, Don Manuel Centurion, made evident the want of reason with which the Dutch complained, and the necessity for taking on our part the precautions he suggested in those regions as very important for the State; but that as in the course of so many years the circumstances of the Province may also have changed, the examination thereof could not be entered upon without new and recent reports of its present condition. By reason of all of which he felt that at this time nothing should be done save to await until future developments should demonstrate what had best be done; with which opinion the Council agreed by resolution of June fourth of the said year of seventeen hundred and eighty-five.

#### *Island of Tortuga.*

On the second of August, sixteen hundred and thirty-five, the dislodging of the enemy from this island was reported, and His Majesty ordered that they work day and night in the Curazao matter.

On the twenty-second of August, of the following year, sixteen hundred and thirty-six, His Majesty made several gifts

of salary and privileges in Santo Domingo to those who distinguished themselves in the engagement which dislodged the enemy from the Island of Tortuga; the Corporal of these was Rui Fernandez de Fuenmayor.

In the year sixteen hundred and fifty-four, several consultations were held reporting the dislodging of the French from this very island. [There is a flourish.]

---

It is a copy agreeing with the original existing in these Archives, in the Bundle endorsed: "State Papers. *Audiencia* of Caracas. Royal Orders, letters of town corporations, Royal officers, private persons, reports, 1750 to 1829."

Seville, June 3, 1890.

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,  
Chief Librarian.

[SEAL.]

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias. Madrid, June 18, 1890.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XXVIII.**

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIAS.—(SEVILLE.)

Case 131.—Shelf 2.—Bundle 17.

---

**No. 3.**

---

**1769.—Certificate of Don Andres de Oleaga, Royal Accountant of Guayana, of the confiscations and seizures made in that Province. Among others, it refers to the seizure made “from the aliens established on the Barima Channel, jurisdiction of this said Province.”**

---

GUAYANA, *January 28.*

---

Don Andres de Olcaga, Official Royal Accountant of this city of Guayana and its Province for His Majesty (whom God preserve), etc.

I certify in the best manner I can, for whatever purpose, and before the Señores that may see it, how, after the arrival of Señor Don Manuel Centurion, Captain of the Royal Corps of Artillery, and Commandant General of this said Province, pursuant to his great energy and zeal in the Royal service, the following confiscations and seizures were made: On the twenty-seventh of January of the past year of seventeen hundred and sixty-seven, in a closed port of the Presidio of old Guayana, a launch coming from Esquivo, Dutch Colony, with two slaves, and cargo of *Taphia* rum and merchandise, from Don Vicente Franco. On the sixth of March of said year, at the same Presidio, various goods from Bernardo Montes, who was coming from the same Colony in a felucca. On the

eleventh of April of the said year, on the land within the said Presidio, four mules loaded with different kinds of foreign clothing, without permit or license. On the twenty-second of said month and year, above the port of this city, different articles, without permit or license, from Lorenzo Yeguas. On June sixteenth of the said year, at the Presidio aforesaid of old Guayana, sixteen kegs of brandy, from Master Gazpar Vidal, who was introducing them clandestinely and left them buried on an islet in the Orinoco. On September twenty-eighth of the same year, at the port of Piacoa, below the aforesaid Presidio, a canoe laden with Dutch goods from Esquibo, from Pedro Sanchez.

And by the Sergeant of the Company of Pioneers, Ciprian Maiorga, with the pirogue he commanded, one of the Orinoco canoes from the aliens engaged in the clandestine extraction of mules, horses, neat cattle, and other products, through the Guarapiche and Theresen rivers, which empty in the interior of the Golpho Triste de la Paria. An English sloop named the *Sevillana*; a Spanish schooner, the *Esperanza*; two launches, also Spanish; an English boat with four lately-imported negroes, some animals, and different foreign articles, besides (in the same campaign and before returning to this city) a French schooner named *Maria Louisa*, with two newly-imported negroes; two barrels, one of claret and the other of *Taphia* rum, and ten *arrobas* (250 lbs.) of *chinchorro* thread; and, also, on the same occasion, in company with the cruiser armed at the Island of Trinidad, a French sloop and schooner with various goods and newly-imported negroes, of which, after deducting all expenses and the sixth part, which the officials retained, they delivered to him the half, which amounts to seventeen hundred and ninety-two *pesos*, twenty-four *maravedis*, which brought in this place two-thousand and eighty-five *pesos*, three *reals*, one and two-fourths *maravedis*. Which seizures were declared to be legal and belonging to His Majesty on March twenty-sixth, April thirtieth, and July twenty-ninth of last year—seventeen hundred and sixty-eight.

And besides the confiscations and seizures mentioned, I also declare that the Captain of the Company of Orinoco Pioneers,

Don Francisco Cierro, with the two cruising launches of this river, sent by the said Señor Don Manuel Centurion, arrested the foreigners that were established on the Barima Channel, jurisdiction of the same Province, two boats and several tools and agricultural implements, which, in an edict issued on the nineteenth of April of the said last year, sixty-eight, were also declared confiscated, and all are recorded in this Royal Accountant's office in ten edicts, and therein the total value of seven thousand *pesos*, one *real*, five and two-fourths *maravedis*, of which, in the way of Royal duties, His Majesty received two thousand seven hundred and ninety-five *pesos*, seven *reals*, thirty-three *maravedis*. And, lastly, the said Captain, from the thirteenth day of October of last year to date, with the said cruising launches under his command, and sent by the aforesaid Commandant General of Orinoco, has seized on the said Guarapiche and Theresen rivers a Spanish launch with twelve heifers, an English sloop with eighty mules, six horses, and five negroes, two *columpos*, or large sloops, one English and the other French, three English schooners, one small Bermuda sloop, of the same nation, one Spanish launch, with seven horses, some goods and implements, against which proceedings are now pending.

And in order that it may go on record, at the verbal request of the said Commandant General, Don Manuel Centurion, I issue this for all the legal and necessary effects.

Done in this Royal Accountant's office of Guayana, on the twenty-eighth day of January, of the year seventeen hundred and sixty-nine.

ANDRES DE OLCAGA—[a flourish].

---

We, Don Joseph Boxi, Captain of Infantry, and Don Vicente Diez de la Fuente, Sub-Lieutenant and Adjutant of these troops of Orinoco, say that the signature with which the foregoing certificate is authenticated is the same used in his office by the official Royal Accountant of this city and Province, Don Andres de Oleaga, and its fac-similes are given full faith and credit everywhere.



And that it may so appear to whoever may see it, we so certify, owing to the absence of a Scrivener and Notary ; and we sign in this city of Guayana, on the twenty-eighth of January, of seventeen hundred and sixty-nine.

JOSÉ BOXI—[a flourish].

VICENTE DIEZ DE LA FUENTE—[a flourish].

---

It is a copy agreeing with the original existing in these Archives, in the bundle marked " 131-2-17."

Seville, May 19, 1890.

[SEAL.]

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,  
Chief Librarian.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias.

Madrid, June 4, 1890.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XXIX.**

Case 133—Shelf 4—Bundle 29.

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIAS.—(SEVILLE.)

---

**No. 6.**

---

**1784—Letter No. 74 from the Intendent of Caracas relating to the encouragement and settlement of Guayana.**

---

Number 74.—Most Excellent Sir.

MY DEAR SIR: The Province of Guayana is the most important of all those included in the vast region called the Mainland, both because of its situation to windward of all the Spanish possessions on this continent, and the extent, variety, and fertility of its lands. Notwithstanding the many advantages nature has granted this Province it daily falls into greater decadence. Far from being a source of profit for the King, it taxes this treasury to the extent of forty thousand *pesos* annually, and its trade renders so small a profit to the Mother-country that a single vessel, only fairly laden, would supply her for many years.

Upon this subject, at various times, have detailed reports been sent to H. M., which have resulted in different measures which, either because they were not carried out with due prudence, or because not of themselves adapted to the magnitude of the subject, have never brought about the happy results their promoters intended.

The two cardinal points to be considered for the up-building of Guayana are: First, the settlement of her extensive and fertile lands; second, the freedom of a reciprocally advantageous

trade with the districts of Barinas, Nutrias, Kingdom of Santa Fe and the southern part of this Province, permitting and even encouraging the navigation of the Meta, Casanare, Apure, Guarico, and Santo Domingo rivers, and other navigable streams emptying into the Orinoco, through which last river a vast trade can be carried on, giving an outlet thereby to the products of the midland Provinces, which, owing to an absence of trade, rest in a sorrowful decadence.

The settlement, in the opinion of all intelligent parties, should begin in lower Guayana, which is the most level, fruitful, and adapted for the new settlements to begin to flourish at once. From that locality it will be easy to extend them to the frontiers of Esquibo and Demerari, to restrain the usurpations of the Dutch up to the neighborhood of the Negro river; to check those of the Portuguese, and occupy the principal channels of the Orinoco so as to end the secret importations thereby made. Otherwise none of these objects can be realized, and if the settlement and projected fort are founded and built in the neighborhood of Esquibo, lower Guayana being left deserted, aside from the great cost to the Royal Treasury to maintain an establishment so many leagues removed from an inhabited place, it will be a sink of abuses, a station for smugglers, a precarious possession in time of war, and a weak barrier against bordering nations.

To enter into the details of this subject would entail making a too prolix representation, in which the lack of knowledge of the locality would always leave its readers in much darkness. Until this matter is decided or taken up fundamentally, the presence in these countries of Lieutenant Don Josef Phelipe de Yuciarte is not necessary. Therefore I decided to send him home to confer verbally with Y. E. upon these matters. He has knowledge of the localities, carries maps and detailed notes, and, if Y. E., owing to pressing engagements, can not give this subject all the attention it demands, you might order a council, presided over by the Most Excellent Señor Don Bernardo de Galvez, to consider fundamentally a matter which, in my opinion, is one of the most difficult and important that can arise in the New World.

God preserve the life of Y. E. many years. Caracas, February 1, 1784. Most Excellent Sir, your humble servant kisses Y. E.'s hand.

FRANCISCO DE SAAVEDRA—[a flourish].  
The Most Excellent Señor Don Josef de Galvez.

---

It is a copy agreeing with the original document existing in the General Archives of the Indias in Case 133—Shelf 4—Bundle 129.

[SEAL.]

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,  
Chief Librarian.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias. Madrid, June 4, 1890.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XXX.**

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIAS.

---

**Letter No. 65, from the Intendent of Caracas, Don Juan Guillelmi, to the Most Excellent Senor Don Pedro de Lerena, transmitting exemplified copies and other documents relative to the construction of the stronghold or sentry box and the establishment of a village of Spaniards at the fork or confluence of the Curiamo and Cuyuni Rivers of the Province of Guayana.**

---

CARACAS, *October 25, 1790.*

---

**MOST EXCELLENT SIR :** In my very confidential representation of the twenty-ninth of September last, number one, advising my determination to order constructed a stronghold or sentry box, and establish a Spanish village at the fork or confluence of the Curiamo and Cuyuni rivers, in the Province of Guayana, which empty into the Esquibo in the Dutch Colonies, I informed Y. E. that I would transmit to you the exemplified copy of a certain record which had been made up for another purpose, and which concurred in the matter of such establishment and that of the town or Mission of Tumeremo.

In effect I send Y. E., under number one, an exemplified copy of said record I promised, and also, under numbers two and three, copies of my official communication and order to the Reverend Father Prefect of the Catalanian Capuchin Missions and the principal officials of the Royal Treasury, in order that Y. E., being apprised of everything done, may be pleased to approve my determination in the understanding that as regards the military phase of this new fortification and the separating from his corps for such commission of the Adjutant

Major of the Veteran Companies of Guayana, Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, I report to the Most Excellent Count del Campo de Alange, as I believe is my duty.

God preserve Y. E. many years. Caracas, the twenty-fifth of October of seventeen hundred and ninety. Most Excellent Sir.

JUAN GUILLELMI—[there is a flourish].

The Most Excellent Señor Don Pedro de Lerena.

*Exemplified copy of the record made up at the instance of the Reverend Father Prefect of Catalonian Capuchins of the Missions of Guayana, relating to the founding and approval of the new town of Tumeremo.*

To the Governor and Captain General :

Friar Buena Bentura de San Celonio, of the Capuchin Order, Preacher, Apostolic missionary and Prefect of the Missions of Catalonian Capuchin Fathers of the Province of Guayana, with due respect to Y. H., represents: That whereas there has been founded a town of Guayana Indians, under the name of Maria Santisima de Velen de Turmeremo, in this year of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight, conformably with the laws of His Catholic Majesty (whom God preserve), therefore I humbly and strongly beseech Y. H. to be pleased to furnish the ornaments, books, sacred goblets, bell, and other jewels necessary to divine worship and the administering of the Holy Sacraments, which are needed for the church of said town; and in order that its establishment and actual existence may appear, I sign it with my own hand, sealed with the great seal of our office, and countersigned by the undersigned Secretary, in this Mission of the Purisima Concepcion de Caroni, on August twelfth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

FRIAR BUENAVENTURA DE SAN CELONIO,

Prefect.

By command of our Very Reverend Father Prefect, Friar Serafin de Arens, Secretary of the Mission.

[Copy.]

Whereas the Prefect and Assistant Judges of these holy Missions of Guayana have found it necessary to seek out a fit and suitable site for the founding of a new town, for the care of a new cattle ranch, and not having found any more conducive to the greater increase and maintenance of the Missions than that of Tumeremo, we have resolved to found it on said site, distant four leagues from Angel Custodio, five from Tupuquen and six from Cura, to the north thereof; and considering that the founding of the said town must result in the best service of both Majesties, we trust in the distinguished course of Y. H. to agree to the same.

God our Master, preserve the important life of Y. H. many years to the benefit of this Province, as in this Mission of Carony we pray on the eighth of February of eighty-eight.

FRIAR BUENAVENTURA DE SAN CELONIO,  
Prefect.

FRIAR BUENAVENTURA DE SEVADEL,  
Assistant Judge.

FRIAR BUENAVENTURA DE SANTA COLOMA,  
Assistant Judge.

---

The approval of the town and cattle ranch which your Reverence informs me in the official communication of the eighth instant you have determined to found on the site or locality you call Tumeremo, I am not authorized to give until I shall inform myself and report to the Intendent General of Caracas, who, in his communications regarding the results of the last two towns, has advised me of the measures that should intervene. Consequently, when I am certain I shall inform him, and shall apprise your Reverence of the result, whose life I pray God may spare many years.

Guayana, February twelfth, seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

MIGUEL MARMION.

Very Reverend Father Prefect and Assistant Judges.

*Another.*

In order to comply with the orders I have received and not to retard the steps leading to the establishment of a herd of cattle which your Reverence and his assistants submit to me in your communication of the eighth instant, I have determined to detail the Adjutant-Major of these troops, Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, who will call upon Y. R. and show the instructions he bears; and it would be advisable for Y. R. to designate a skilled brother who, in company with this officer, shall go and see and reconnoitre the Tumeremo site and an advantageous and suitable place on the Cuyuni river to found a town or stronghold to defend the rear of the Missions and aid the new subjugations which the venerable community under Y. R. is continuing. In this connection I recall having conversed with your predecessor and other missionaries, who suggested to me that the place where the Yuruario and Cuyuni meet would be well adapted; nevertheless, I have advised the officer not to fail to investigate the neighborhood to see if there is another more advantageous spot affording more room. This matter being so interesting to the Royal service and useful to the preservation and increase of those Missions, I trust that Y. R. will extend to the said Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente whatever assistance he may require to carry out the mission with which he is charged, and that you will issue your orders by circular that they may be obeyed by the missionaries as well as by their subjects in the town he is to pass, in the understanding that whatever expense he may incur, by securing his receipt, will be immediately paid; and in this confidence, and satisfied of the love and zeal for the Royal service which animates Y. R., I pray our Lord to spare your life many years.

Guayana, February sixteenth, seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

MIGUEL MARMION.

V. R. F. Prefect, Friar Buenaventura de San Celonio.

---

*Another.*

In reply to the communication Y. H. sent me on the twentieth of the current May, I must state the following: That



pursuant to an ordinance approved by the King our Master, (whom God preserve) we are commanded, among other things, that the Prefect and Assistant Judges shall meet to designate sites for the new settlements. This has always been done whenever it has been wished to found an Indian town, and in the same way those localities have been sought which have best tended to the welfare of the Indians and to the advantage of our Sovereign, and this appears to us to accord well with the laws relating to the founding of Indian towns; wherefore it can be clearly seen, when we once observe how the above-expressed is done, that we adequately comply with the obligation of founders of Indian towns, which we enjoy through the King our Master. Nor does it follow from this that it is unnecessary to ask the approval of Y. H. of some town that is being founded: First, because in case that we should not succeed, through inadvertence, in selecting a site, Y. H. still has the liberty of showing the inadvisability of settling on such site. Second, because to secure the allowance which the mercy of our Catholic Monarch has assigned for such town it is always necessary that the approval of the Chief of the Province should have preceded; otherwise we can not see how it would be possible for the Royal treasury at Caracas to pay the allowance, without first showing the approval of Y. H. Third, it appears not to be unnecessary because by requesting the approval Y. H. is advised, when it becomes necessary to ask the Court for missionaries, of the increase in towns, and in proportion to the increase more or less missionaries are called for. Fourth, it is not unnecessary to ask the approval of the new settlement for the durability thereof as much on the part of the founder as on that of the approver, because once approved no authority or liberty is left any one to destroy or transfer it; and if, through less serious causes, any discretion remains to destroy it when not approved, when it is, more serious causes are required. Lastly, if it be true that we may err in the selection of a site the same may happen to others, as experience has shown, and this may be due to the fact that under present circumstances the said site may appear to be well adapted, although afterwards, other conditions having arisen, it may be

found to be not so adapted as it had first appeared. The truth is that we endeavor as far as possible to keep within the tenor of the laws and decrees His Majesty (whom God preserve) has issued to us, and no one in the world can rightfully say the contrary. We are not unaware of the remarks that some one or more have made; but, in truth, we also know that they emanate from a purely venomous inclination; they are not founded on any true grounds; but on false grounds, destitute of every justifiable reason, as, whenever it may be advisable and necessary, we shall prove, not only to Y. H., but also to any other person in the world.

By the foregoing we think we have, for the present, manifested to Y. H. whatever is proper to the end that Y. H. may, without scruple, and whenever necessary, be assured of our upright conduct in the matter of founding settlements, and that we therein act in conformity with the laws, in order to give the necessary approval whenever advisable. It makes no difference that we have the practice of stationing priests (if any there be), for whenever we are satisfied that the site is adaptable, convenient, and possessing all the other necessary conditions as well for the Indians as for the King our Master, and Y. H. being at liberty to make known the uselessness, if it be the fact, of the site for the Indians, or the inconvenience thereof for the King our Master, it appears to us that we act very properly, for Y. H. must presume that we are not so inconsiderate as to wish to do things without thought and prudence, nor are we so rash that we do things of such consequence with audacity and despotically.

The fact is that no one better than ourselves should look to, and in fact we do look to, and even secure, the comfort and convenience of the Indians as well as of the King our Master in the matter of the settling and subjugating of Indians, owing to the great solicitude with which our pious and Catholic Monarch has entrusted them to us. In truth, I confess to Y. H. that I have been unable to understand why you place those difficulties in our way, while none of Y. H.'s predecessors had ever placed difficulties in this regard, the fact being that they did not ignore the sound method and practices which the Reverend

Catalonian Capuchin missionaries had from the beginning used in the matter of the settlement of Indian towns. That if Y. H. has seen fit to object now to having established the cattle ranch on the savannahs of Tumeremo because the savannahs of the old cattle ranch are almost entirely the same, it appears to us that the reason is very poor that Y. H. gives for the objection, for as the latter site being so distant from the Cuyuni river, as it is notorious to all, the reason for the objection vanishes immediately. The fact is that Y. H.'s predecessor had no objection to allowing the settlement of the site of Cura, as it is much nearer to the Cuyuni river than that of Tumeremo, and the Curumo site was also nearer, nevertheless one of Y. H.'s predecessors had no objection to allowing it to be settled, although, because the Caribs living in that neighborhood had taken up arms, it has not again been settled. Finally, let not Y. H. hesitate to place before us all the observations that may have been made by the Adjutant Major, Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, as we are ready to give reasons for everything, and have nothing to hide in our method of working, but, as is publicly known, we have nothing to fear, as our conscience does not accuse us in any way.

I say nothing further at present on this matter, in order not to molest Y. H. And since Y. H. requests a detailed statement of all the settlements, setting forth the year of the founding of each of them, I send it to Y. H., annexed to this, for whatever purposes Y. H. may deem proper.

God our Lord preserve you many years, as I desire.

Carony, May thirty-first of seventeen hundred and thirty-eight.

FRIAR BUENAVENTURA DE SAN CELONIO,

Prefect.

To the Governor and Commandant-General, Don Miguel Marmion.

---

It is a copy of the original of its contents.

Guayana, September third, of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

MARMION.

*Certificate.*

The undersigned certify in the best form of law that on the twenty-fifth day of the month of April, of this year, we celebrated our triennial meeting at the Mission of San Joseph de Cupapuy, at which the Reverend Father Friar Buenaventura de San Celonio was elected Prefect of our Missions, and the Reverend Fathers Friar Buenaventura de Saavadel and Friar Buenaventura de Santa Coloma were elected Assistant Judges, and pursuant to our institutes the said Reverend Fathers elected the following Missionary Fathers to the offices and Presidencies below named :

*Carony.*—The Very Reverend Father Prefect, and as President Father Friar Serafin de Arens, Procurator and Secretary, and Brother Hilarion de Tarragona, lay nurse.

*Monte Calvario.*—President, Father Friar Pasqual de Barcelona.

*San Miguel.*—President, Reverend Father Friar Hermenegildo de Vichex, Prefect Chronicler and Treasurer.

*Santa Ana.*—President, Reverend Father Friar Buenaventura de Santa Coloma, Assistant Judge.

*Atlagracia.*—President, Father Friar Thomas de Olod, and Father Friar Justo de Barcelona.

*Cupupuy.*—President, Reverend Father Friar Felis de Saraga, ex-Assistant Judge, and Reverend Father Friar Thomas de Mataro, ex-Assistant Judge.

*Santa Maria.*—Father Friar Agustin de Barcelona, President.

*Palmar.*—President, Father Friar Antonio Martorel.

*Cumamu.*—President, Presbyter Friar Raimundo de Olod.

*Miamo.*—President, Father Friar Josef Maria Mataro.

*Carapo.*—President, Father Friar Manuel Preyxama.

*Tupuquen.*—President, Father Friar Leopoldo de Barcelona.

*Cattle Ranch of Tumeremo.*—President, Father Friar Mariano de Perafitia.

*Cura.*—President, Father Friar Manuel de Catell.

*Gucuiipati.*—President, Father Friar Pedro Martin de Rivas.

*Divina Pastora.*—President, Father Friar Juan de Livia.

*Ayma*.—President, Father Friar Joaquin de Barcelona.

*Avechica*.—President, Father Friar Domingo de San Ipolito, Nurse.

*Santa Clara*.—President, Father Friar Hermenegildo de Premia.

*San Serafin*.—Father Friar Juan Bautista de Olod.

*San Pedro de las Bocas*.—Father Friar Felix Vich.

*Santa Madalena de Curucay*.—President, Father Friar Bernardino de San Felis.

*Puedpa*.—Father Friar Mariano de Ververa.

*Guxi*.—President, Father Friar Francisco Barnius.

*San Antonio*.—President, Father Friar Bernardino de Verdu.

*Morucuru y Caruache*.—Reverend Father Friar Buenaventura de Sevadell, Assistant Judge.

*Villa de San Antonio de Upata*.—Curate *ad interim*, Father Friar Henrique de Puig.

*Villa de San Isidoro de Barceloneta*.—Curate *ad interim*, Father Friar Luis de Castell Tersol.

In testimony whereof we issue these presents, signed by our hands and sealed with the seal of the Mission, countersigned by the Secretary of the Mission, at the Mission of La Purisima Concepcion de Caroni, the thirtieth of April, of the year seven-  
teen hundred and eighty-seven.

FRIAR BUENAVENTURA DE SAN CELONIA,  
Prefect.

FRIAR BUENAVENTURA DE SEVADEL,  
Assistant Judge.

FRIAR BUENAVENTURA DE SANTA COLOMA,  
Assistant Judge.

FRIAR SERAFIN DE ARENS,  
Secretary of the Mission.

To the Governor and Commandant General, Don Miguel Marmion.

---

It is a verbatim copy of the original of its contents.

Guayana, June thirtieth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

MARMION.

[*Copy.*]

Detailed statement of all the settlements existing which the Reverend Catalonian Capuchin Missionary Fathers have founded in this Province of Guayana, pursuant to the authority thereunto granted them by the King our Master (whom God preserve) in several Royal decrees issued for that purpose, under whose executive Government they are by virtue of the authority they have from His Majesty ; setting forth the year of the founding of each settlement, which statement I, the Prefect of Guayana, send to the Governor of the said Province, he having so requested me, in a letter dated May twentieth, of the year seventeen hundred and eighty-eight, as follows :

When founded—

- 1724. Mission of the Purísima Concepcion de Caroni.
- 1730. Mission of Santa Maria de los Angeles de Iacuaru.
- 1733. Mission of San Joseph de Cupapui.
- 1734. Mission of Nuestro Serafico Padre San Francisco de Altagracia.
- 1734. Mission of San Miguel del Palmar.
- 1737. Mission of the Divina Pastora de Tarivarío.
- 1748. Mission of Nuestra Señora de Monserrate del Miamo.
- 1752. Mission of San Miguel de Carapo.
- 1754. Mission of Santa Eulalia de Murucury.
- 1755. Mission of San Joseph de Lionicia de Ayma.
- 1757. Mission of Nuestra Señora del Rosario de Gucuitati.
- 1760. Mission of Nuestra Señora Santa Ana de Paracai-curu.
- 1761. Mission of Santa Cruz de Monte Calvario.
- 1763. Mission of San Raymundo de Caravache.
- 1765. Mission of San Antonio de Huiesatono.
- 1767. Mission of the conversion of San Pablo del Cumamo.
- 1769. Mission of Nuestra Señora de los Dolores de Piedad.
- 1770. Mission of San Felis de Topuquen.
- 1770. Mission of San Pedro de las Bocas.
- 1771. Mission of San Buenaventura de Guri.
- 1779. Mission of San Miguel de Hunata.
- 1779. Mission of Santa Clara de Tavarapana.

- 1779. Mission of San Serafin Arahuaatima.
- 1782. Mission of Santa Rosa de Vitermo de Cura.
- 1783. Mission of Santa Magdalena de Currucay.
- 1783. Mission of San Juan Bautista del Abechica.
- 1785. Mission of Santo Angel Custodio.
- 1788. Mission of Nuestra Señora de Velen.
- 1762. Village of San Antonio de Upata.
- 1770. Village of San Isidro de la Barceloneta.

This is, sir, the true statement which Y. H. requested of all the existing settlements. And should any detail be missing, I refer to the Registers or Polls which I sent Y. H. at the beginning of this year of eighty-eight, and of which I have had no notice as to whether they were received or not.

To all of which I certify, in this Mission of Caroni, on this thirty-first day of May, of the year seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

FRIAR BUENAVENTURA DE SAN CELONIO,  
Prefect.

---

It is a copy from the original.

Guayana, June thirtieth of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

MARMION.

---

*Diary of the Governor of Guayana.*

On the twenty-sixth day of February of this present year, at ten o'clock at night, the Adjutant Major Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente left this capital of Guayana with a passport and instructions from the Governor of this Province, Don Miguel Marmion, to exhaustively explore the Cuyuni river and its neighborhood. And having embarked on the launch in the charge of Miguel Castellanos, accompanied by Corporal Antonio Mora, we arrived at the port of San Joaquin on the twenty-eighth instant, at three o'clock in the afternoon, and at the same hour I wrote to the Reverend Father Prefect, who was in the town of Caroni, to send me animals for my transportation, enclosing the official letter which I brought for the said

Father from the Governor, and seeing that it was getting dark and nothing had arrived, I took from a muletteer at the time in the port the necessary animals for my transportation and set out on the twenty-ninth day, arriving at the town of Caroni after a journey of two leagues, and at seven o'clock in the morning I went to see the Prefect, whom I requested, after he was apprised of the commission entrusted to me through the official letter and the instructions I showed him, to furnish me horses so as to proceed on the same day to the village of Upata, to which he replied that everything would be got in readiness for me, as he was much pleased that some notice was being taken of the localities of Cuyuni since for sometimes previous they had represented the great danger the Missions hereabouts were in because of the Dutch ; but that I could not start yet, as it was necessary to consult with the Assistant Judges to select a priest to accompany me ; and awaiting this determination, I was detained until the second.

On the second day of March I left Caroni at four o'clock in the afternoon, the Father Prefect having informed me that the Father selected to accompany me was Father Mariano de Perafita ; that he had written to Father Manuel de Presiana to accompany me, as soon as I reached the town of Carapo, to that of Tupuquen, and from Tupuquen as far as Angel Custodio ; and he also handed me a circular letter to the end that the Fathers on my travels should furnish me all the assistance I might require, with which I took my leave, and after having traveled five leagues we arrived at the watch-house and ranch of Guacayma at about seven in the evening.

On the third, at six in the morning, I again took up the road, and having traveled seven leagues we reached the town of Altagracia at four o'clock in the afternoon. Having arranged with the Father of this town that when I should advise him from the village of Upata he would send me the animals and other necessary things I might request, we remained until the following day.

On the fourth, at seven o'clock in the morning, I started for the village of Upata, arriving there at ten o'clock a. m., after a two leagues' ride. On this same day I delivered the order



of the Governor to the Lieutenant, Don Diego Morales, who, as the residents of the village were in the fields, found it necessary to send for them; and of the three who were to accompany me, Patricio Rivas was absent, who did not put in an appearance for five days, wherefore I was constrained to remain until the ninth, on which day the animals I had already requested of the Father of the Pueblo of Altagracia arrived.

On the tenth I continued my way towards the town of Santa Maria with three residents of the town of Upata and a militiaman of the escort of three, which, by order of the Governor communicated to the Sergeant commanding the said escort, the latter was required to furnish me, who being in the towns of Angel Custodio and Aguachica, were sent orders to join me; and having reached the said town of Santa Maria, which is four leagues distant from the village, I requested animals from the Father of this town, which were made ready for me on the following day.

On the seventh I continued my trip at three o'clock p. m., and after having gone five leagues we arrived at the Cume river at seven o'clock at night. On the twelfth I started at ten o'clock a. m., as two horses had disappeared, and as best we could we got along as far as the savannah of Carapo, where it became necessary to camp after midday, as we had traveled with a great lack of water only four leagues, stopping in a mulberry copse until the following day.

On the thirteenth, at seven in the morning, we started, and having traveled four leagues we reached the town of Carapo and animals were got ready to proceed on the next day.

On the fourteenth I went on in company with Father Manuel de Preciana, who had received orders from the Prefect to accompany me as far as Topuquen, and having traveled five leagues we reached the said town after twelve o'clock in the day, when the said Father returned to his town, leaving the same order of the Father Prefect to Father Leopoldo of this town; and on this same day I sent for the militiaman Miguel Suniga, interpreter of the Carib tongue, and one of the three detailed to accompany me, to advise me as to the Indians that were to be taken, and from what settlement; and on this same day Father Leopoldo sent for Father Mariano, selected to go

with me, and who was at the Port of Angel Custodio; and he having arrived, jointly with the said Suniga, at 7 o'clock p. m. of this day, I being informed by the said Suniga of what was best adapted for the success of the mission.

On the fifteenth the two Fathers, Leopoldo and Mariano, with the assistance of Suniga, conferred with me as to the provisions to be made with respect to Indian pilots and rowers, boats and supplies. And on this same day a request was sent to Father Pedro of Guacipata for ten Caribs, as these were the best pilots, since of those of this town of Tupuquen the best were on the Coyuni, by permission of Father Leopoldo, and only four were found that could be disposed of, and they were designated. On this same day the Father of Cura was advised, in order that he might prepare jerked beef and secure the *casabe*, he could get ready, which advice was sent by Father Mariano, and we remained until the following day awaiting the Indians and the answer from Cura.

On the sixteenth day the said Father Mariano returned to his town of Angel Custodio to arrange for his trip and await our arrival, in the understanding that the rowers that might be needed could be made up from among those in Angel Custodio with two militiamen of the said fourteen Caribs, and those already with me, for, although orders were sent for one who was in Aguachica to accompany me, the Missionary Father of the said town objected, and notwithstanding that Father Leopoldo remonstrated, saying that the said militiaman was necessary to the said expedition, the Father had his way, not allowing him to come, and although it was necessary to take some military action I left on this day. After traveling more than two leagues we reached the town of Angel Custodio, where I found a message from the Father of Cura, saying that the meat I might need was ready, and that as regards the *casabe* he only had five *cargas*, in which understanding six additional *cargas* were requested of Father Leopoldo, which we took to Cura, having dispatched on this day a canoe with six Indians to said Cura, owing to the lack of boats in these parts. And having made the necessary horses ready, we remained until the following day.

On the eighteenth we started for the town of Cura, and

having traveled five leagues we arrived at said town, where resides Father Friar Manuel de Castell, and conferring with the said Father and Father Mariano (who now accompanied me, being detailed for the said trip) regarding boats, he offered those he had, which he went to inspect, and, in fact, we found in a bend two large and suitable canoes, which, with the one brought from Angel Custodio, would furnish sufficient transportation to carry out the trip. Notwithstanding this action, and the rest he had ready in the way of provisions, the said Father offered us anything else we might require for the service of the King; but he asking how we expected to continue our trip, I replied, that by water, to which he replied that he had offered everything, so as not to appear as objecting, but that it was impossible to carry out the trip, as the river was absolutely dry; that at no time had he ever seen it as it then was; to which I added that nevertheless we would find the best way of continuing; and pursuant to this information of the Father I determined to convince myself through the expert Carib Indians from Guacipata and Tupuquen. Although they gave me the same answer, I asked if we could not proceed, even with great labor, dragging the canoes. They said we could; but before two days we would no longer have any boats, and by the six or eight days necessary to reach the Supamo river, where we could find navigation, it would be necessary to construct new canoes, because the Yuruari, whereby we would have to go, was one long rock in summer, and that this, as well as the Supamo, was impassable at this season. Despite these reasons I summoned them, so as to make an inspection on the next day, and also invited the two Fathers aforesaid, who at once offered to join me, as was done on the day following.

On the nineteenth day, at eight a. m., we, the said Fathers, Friar Mariano and Father Manuel, and I, accompanied by Corporal Antonio Mora, five Spaniards, and the Caribs of Tupuquen and Guasipati, went to the port of Cura, on the Yuaricari river, and at a distance of a quarter of a league I was convinced it was impossible to navigate it, for at several points we crossed it dry-shod, wherefore I determined to return to the town until the following day.

On the twentieth day I sent Corporal Antonio Mora, in company with the two militiamen, three townsmen, and the Carib Indians, to inspect the body of the river all that day to see if lower down water could be found. He returned with his companions, stating that by reason of its being more rocky there was less water; and having submitted to the Carib Indians and asked Zuniga, the interpreter, and one of the militiamen accompanying me, if by going to the Supamo river by land, and there making bark canoes, we could proceed, they replied that it was very difficult, since owing to the Indians having used this river as a means of communication, no bark was to be found, nor trees from which to take it. And in view of these reasons, and that I, wishing, in the same way, to open a road up to the mouth of the Yuruari and make bark canoes, and confronted by the difficulty mentioned, that in all this forest very little bark is to be found, and since even if the said road were opened—which would necessitate at least forty days—I would find no savannahs in the whole distance up to the entrance of the Yuruari into the Supamo river; for all these reasons I determined to suspend all action until the river should take its water, as the winter is drawing near.

And making this suggestion in harmony with the Father of this town of Cura, a new difficulty presented itself; for it is said that when the Yuruari river rises the descent thereof is good; but that the ascent would take place about the time of the highest water, and as the greater part of the country is inundated we would die of hunger, and that experience showed that the season when the Indians navigated it was from August to February—when the Indians made their trips to Esquivo—and that those going from February on found it necessary to remain until the beginning of winter, as is the case with those from Tupuquen who had not yet returned. Aside from these reasons, my own experience and practice convinced me, and it appearing idle to remain, and in order to avoid the greater expense that might be occasioned I decided to return and report to the Governor all that has taken place, and also the opportune time.

On the twenty-first I communicated to Father Mariano, my

associate, the determination I had reached to return to the Capital to report events; and regarding the provisions ready for the trip (Father Mariano and the Father of Cura added), the *casave* would be sent to the new cattle ranch of Tumeremo, and the beef would remain in Cura for the ordinary consumption of the town. This new cattle ranch of Tumeremo is established, as they say, about six or seven leagues from Cura, eastwardly, and from said ranch to the east there is a river called the Curumo, which flows south (like the Yuruari) seeking its junction with the Cuyuni, and although not so large as the Yuruari it is navigable during the same season and is nearer the mouth of the Masurini, where are situated the first habitations of the Dutch, and, according to the most trustworthy accounts of the Carib Indians, from the mouth of the Corumo down there are no rapids, nor any obstacle whatever interfering with the passage of any vessel at all times, and no difficulties (rapids) which they say there are on the Yuruari and Coyuni down to the mouth of the Curumo, whereby I thought of returning to come out at Tumeremo.

On the twenty-second I sent the Caribs and rowers to their respective towns, and the Father and I remained with the Spaniards, who returned the next day to Angel Custodio, leaving the canoe brought down therefrom, as it could not be taken along. On the twenty-third day Father Mariano and I and the other Spaniards left Cura for Angel Custodio, warning beforehand the Father of Cura that until the said trip to Coyuni should be made it would be very advisable not to give the Indians permission to go to the Dutch, because of the ill consequences that might ensue should it be divulged among the Dutch that the said exploration of the Coyuni and its neighborhood was intended; recalling to the said Father the incidents of the Parime expedition, and adding that a like warning would be given Father Leopoldo at Tupuquen and Father Pedro at Guacipati. On the twenty-fourth I left Angel Custodio for Topuquen, and having given the said warning and monition to Father Leopoldo, with the horses which were got ready on this day, I remained until the next day.

On the twenty-fifth I left Tupuquen for Guacipati and ad-

monished Father Pedro Martin in the same manner as the Father of Cura and Tupuquen, as I knew that so soon as the river began to fill the Indians of this town went down to Esquivo, for which trip I noticed they had many hammocks made, and asking what they were for, they replied, "to take to Esquivo to the Dutch;" that for each hammock they gave them a bolt of lining cambric and six flasks of rum or a liquor case. On the twenty-sixth I left Guacipati for Carapo, and in order to change horses I stayed in the said Carapo all the rest of the day. On the twenty-seventh I left Carapo, and on the twenty-eighth arrived at the town of Santa Maria.

On the twenty-ninth I left Santa Maria, and having this day reached the village of Upata, I remained until Monday, the seventh day of April, owing to illness. Leaving in charge of the sergeant commanding the escort the two militiamen who had accompanied me, and also having delivered to the Lieutenant of said village the three residents with the horses furnished me from Altagracia, I went on towards Caroni. On the eighth I reached Caroni, where, by order of the Father Prefect, I was furnished a pirogue and six Indian rowers from the town of Puga, and I left for this Capital on the tenth, leaving with the Father Prefect a statement of the horses and peons that had been furnished me at each town going and coming for my transportation.

On the twelfth I reached this Capital with the Corporal of Infantry, Antonio Mora, there remaining still in my possession the two hundred cartouches and five pounds of powder delivered to me; and of the four *arrobas* (100 lbs.) of tobacco which I took at the village of Upata for the Indians, only two pounds having been consumed, there remains in my possession the rest until further order of the Governor.

Guayana, April thirteenth, seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

ANTONIO LOPEZ DE LA PUENTE.

It is a verbatim copy of the original of its contents.

Guayana, August fourteenth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

MARMION.

[Copy.]

To the Governor and Commandant General, Don Miguel Mar-  
mion :

VERY VENERATED SIR: In view of what Y. H. was pleased to transmit to me on the thirteenth of June, of this current year, in San Rafael, I have to say: That I have seen everything stated to Y. H. by the Reverend Father Friar Justo de Barcelona, in a letter of the twenty-third of May last, as I have also seen and read everything set forth by the said Reverend Father to Y. H. in the instrument of the tenth of June last, authenticated by the Reverend Fathers signing the same, and find that all statements of what has occurred, and is occurring in this Reverend Community, is absolutely true, which I testify to and confirm in the best manner I can and the law requires, and therefore I deem it excusable to molest Y. H. with a rehearsal of the points set forth and expressed by the said Father Friar Justo. As regards the particular points which Y. H. specifies, I state: That the site or place where they are going to locate the cattle ranch or town is called Tumeremo and Cantuario. These savannahs border on others called Suxsua and are separated only by some fringes of open woods affording easy passage to the cattle. From the said site of Tumeremo to the said savannahs there is a distance of six leagues, and the said savannahs run as far as the Cuyuni, which can be reached in one full day; and from Tumeremo to the great forest, where there was a road to Esquivo, in six hours. From the site where the new Tumeremo cattle ranch is to be located to the town of Cura is seven leagues, and from this port, which is on the Yeruari river, to the Cuyuni, can be made in one full day when the river is high, navigating the Yeruari river down stream, and no ranges of hills are found greater than those in front of the town of Cura. On either bank of the Yeruari there are mineral mountains. This river enters the Yeruari at the very mouth of the Cuyuni. Where the Cuyuni and Yeruari join there is a site adapted to the building of a stronghold or guardhouse to prevent the Indians from going down to Esquivo, and to

restrain the entrance of the Dutch to these Missions and savannahs.

From the Cuyuni river to Lake Parime the Indians say they take twenty days, and I have also in mind that an Indian from Guacipati said to the Reverend Father Benito de Garriga (may he rest in peace), that in twenty days one could go by land from Guacipati to the savannahs of Parima; that there are eight days of mountain climbing, and some large hills and plains to cross to go to the port or fortress of the Portuguese in Curaricara. To go to the Parime river one can not go by land, but only by water, taking boat on the Mayari or on the Hariapura river, which are in the Parima savannahs, and that the trip is longer and more difficult. As regards the allowances of beef to the residents of the village of Upata, they are not treated as they might be because the adequate measures to this end have not been taken, as the said residents must pay for it and have the trouble of going to look for it on the savannahs; and they can not go where they wish, owing to the opposition they find in some Reverend Missionaries, going so far, as has at times happened, to let loose the cattle they had collected; and for three years back beef is very expensive, as the cattle have not been adapted to killing. The residents have demanded that the cattle be placed in the corral, and that they will pay whatever is just, according to the value; and not, as is now the practice, paying the same for big and little; and I know that half the time they lack beef, which is the case at the time I am writing, when it may be that not a single piece can be found in the village. What I can say in this respect is what I have heard all intelligent parties assert, that in the interest of the very cattle ranch it would be better that the cattle be placed in the corral at Upata, for if the residents themselves must go after them, in rounding up some yearling steers, they necessarily disturb a great part of other cattle, and if a person be designated to drive the cattle to the corral at Upata, he would know where to take them from without any subsequent detriment to the other beeves, as was the opinion of Don Luis Sanchez, ex-Mayordomo, who had to resign, because he saw that some of



the Reverend Fathers thought they were more intelligent in this matter. I say : *Peritus in sua arte in incredendu.*

Lastly, regarding what you ask touching the means I consider as the most advisable, prudent and decorous to heal differences which have arisen among the priests composing this Venerable Community, I know of none save that the Very Reverend Father Commissary General act pursuant to what has been represented to him by some of the members of this Reverend Community, and I find it very advisable for Father Justo to go before the Very Reverend Father Commissary General to prove everything, because, as the Very Reverend Father is so far away it is not easy to apply the remedy with the required promptness, and thus no information will be given the public. Finally, what I deem most advisable for the civilization of the Indians and communication, so that they may emerge from their chimeras, and what tends also to the greatest advancement of the settlements, is the Spaniard, for by treating with the Spaniards they go to work, being by natural inclination given over to idleness; the subjugated can be managed better, and can be utilized to subjugate those of the forest. And to this end ten or twelve Spanish families could be placed in each settlement, and in this way there is no doubt that the most effective service could be rendered both Majesties.

My dear sir, I make the foregoing statement (confidentially as your Honor suggests to me) with the frankness characterizing me, without being carried away by any passion, and Y. H. may make the use he chooses of it for the benefit of the Missions and Province.

God preserve Y. H. many years. Cupapui, July sixth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-seven. I kiss the hand of Y. H.

FRIAR TOMÁS DE MATARÓ.

---

It is a copy of the original.

Guayana, August twenty-seven, of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

MARMION.

*Official letter.*

MY DEAR SIR: In consequence of a certain letter of the Prefect of the Missions of Catalonian Capuchin Fathers in your Province, sent at the instance of the Sindic thereof, requesting that they be provided with ornaments and other necessities for Divine worship and administering of the Sacraments in the new church consecrated to the Holy Guardian Angel of the same Mission, who is the titular saint of the settlement they have founded, and the existence of which is certified to Y. H. at the bottom of the said letter, I must advise Y. H. that it would be very advisable for future reports of this nature to come confidentially, setting forth the date of the founding, the number of the members composing it, the hopes entertained as to its permanence, the behavior and demeanor of the missionaries, and everything else you may deem tending to inform the Royal mind of our Sovereign and to the best accomplishment of his Royal pious intentions. Trusting that Y. H. will apprise me of the receipt hereof, and that you understand it so as to duly comply therewith, may God preserve Y. H. many years. Caracas, April eleventh, of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight. Francisco de Saavedra. To the Subdelegate of the Royal Treasury of Guayana. It is a copy of the original, bearing a sign manual.

---

*Official letter.*

To the Superintendent General:

I address Y. H. the accompanying memorial presented to me by the Very Rev. Father Prefect of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers of the Missions of Guayana, in which he requests to be furnished with ornaments, books, sacred goblets, bell, and other jewels necessary for Divine worship in the church of the settlement newly founded under the name or title of Nuestra Señora de Belen de Tumeremo; and since the predecessor of Y. H. advised me in an official communication of April, of seventeen hundred and eighty-six, that in similar cases I should send my report confidentially, setting forth the

date of the founding, the number of members composing it, the hopes entertained as to its permanency, etc., I comply therewith as follows: By the copy of letter number one Y. H. will see that the Rev. Father Prefect and Assistant Judges resorted to this Government on the eighth of February last, reporting that they had determined upon planting this new establishment; by that numbered two is seen what I replied, and by number three the measures I took to carry out this obligation; and lately they wrote me, on the thirty-first of May last (copy number four) in a style which was very objectionable to me, questioning authority and interposing objections which the wise judgment of Y. H. will fittingly value. In the report which they presented to me on the thirtieth of April of last year (eighty-seven), of the meeting they held to elect the Prefect and Assistant Judges, which I annex under number five, Tumeremo appears under the designation of cattle-ranch, and its President as Father Friar Mariano de Perafita.

In the statement I requested, and which the Prefect sent me on the thirty-first of May of this year, of the number of Missions and the founding of each, Tumeremo appears under the title of Nuestro Señora de Velen, as Y. H. will find in copy number six. Neither at its commencement nor now have I been furnished the number of souls it has, nor much less does such a settlement appear in the rolls that have been delivered to me up to date; but I am informed that for this settlement Indians were taken from other towns, as was done in the case of that of Angel Custodio, and that on my last visit to the village of Upata several fugitive families had come to the Missions of Cupapuy and Altagracia, whence they had taken them. In the said report, number five, the town of Angel Custodio was suppressed, and in the statement number six it is revived, and according to the rolls the President is Father Friar Mariano de Perafita, the same person given as President of Tumeremo, without my being able to understand in what these equivocations consist. All I am aware of is that they were the origin of the disagreements among these priests of which Y. H. is informed, as well as that they were reported to the King. I can not know the hopes that may be entertained as to the

permanency of this settlement, for the information I have of that land and of its local features will be shown to Y. H. by the copy of the confidential letter number seven, and the other documents accompanying it, when the report was made to the King, since I addressed them through Y. H. and the Intendent, your predecessor, and subsequently. And although for this purpose, and other matters of the greatest concern to the service of the King, I sent Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, Adjutant Major of the troops of this detail, with a mission, this officer could not carry it out in accordance with the instructions I gave him, for the reasons he alleges in his diary, a copy of which I send herewith under number eight.

By virtue of all the foregoing, Y. H. will resolve whatever you may deem expedient, issuing your orders, that I may promptly obey them.

God preserve Y. H. many years.

Guayana, August fourth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

MIGUEL MARMION.

Señor Don Juan Guillelmi.

---

*Decree.*

Caracas, October third, seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

Refer, with its antecedents, to the Counsellor General.

GUILLELMI.

---

*Opinion.*

Y. H. may refer this record for report to the General Ministers, or wherever it may be best.

Caracas, October fourteenth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

ALCALDE.

---

*Decree.*

Caracas, fourteenth of October, of seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

Do as the Counsellor General states.

GUILLELMI.

*Report.*

To the Superintendent General:

The General Ministers, in view of this official communication, numbered twenty-three, of the Governor of Guayana, referring to the founding of the new Mission town of the Catalanian Capuchin Fathers called Tumeremo, say: That to inform Y. H. respecting this record with the proper knowledge it is necessary that Y. H. order to be annexed thereto the letter of the Reverend Father Prefect of the Capuchin Missions of Guayana, referred to in the copy of the order of April eleventh last, sent by Señor Don Francisco de Saavedra to the said Governor and Subdelegate of that Province, which, bearing the sign-manual of Y. H., indicates the beginning and basis of the matter, and they think that Y. H. should afterwards submit it to the Attorney General of His Majesty for an opinion, expressing what is expedient touching the serious points embraced by this representation and the annexed copies, relating as well to the Political Government as to the Royal Treasury and the good of the State.

Caracas, October eighteenth, seventeen hundred and eighty-eight.

JOSEF DE VIDAONDA.  
ANTONIO MALLO.

---

*Decree.*

Caracas, February seventeenth of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

The letter of the Prefect of the Missions of the Catalanian Capuchin Fathers of Guayana not being in the office of the Secretary of the Superintendency, inform the General Ministers. Refer this record to the Attorney General of His Majesty for opinion, as requested by said Ministers.

GUILLELMI.

---

*Opinion.*

To the President and Superintendent General:

The Attorney General of His Majesty has examined the official communication of the Governor of Guayana relative to

the representation of the devout Father Prefect and the Catalonian Capuchin missionaries of the said Province, asking that they be granted sacred goblets, ornaments, and a bell for the church of the new cattle ranch of Tumeremo, which they call the town of Nuestra Señora de Belen, together with the documents annexed, and says: That it not appearing that the necessary permit for the founding of this settlement has been granted as yet, nor the selection of the site thereof approved— notwithstanding that the Community and Assistant Judges have agreed upon it—he can not at this time agree that they be given what is necessary for the church until all the necessary instructions being given and the personal inspection performed, it be investigated whether or not its establishment is advisable—which the Attorney General esteems as one of the most delicate points in the premises, and which he needs to consult with His Majesty, especially when reflecting on the particulars set forth in the diary of the officer, Don Antonio. Lopés de la Puente, and in the report of the old Missionary Friar, Thomás de Mataró, absent at this time in the Kingdom of Spain. The Attorney General bears in mind that because of the exposed position of the territories lying between the mouths of the Orinoco and the sources of old Guayana, through the contiguity of the Dutch Colonies, their settlement has been prohibited; and therefore the greater part of the Missions established are situated on the lands of the Caroni river, above the said forts and further towards the interior of the Province. And he is informed that as the headwaters of the Cuyuni river (which empties into the Esquivo) reached the interior towns of the same Missions, the Royal Commissioner, Don Joseph de Yturriaga, planned that a fort be built at the junction of the Curiamo river and the said Cuyuni, to prevent the said foreign colonists from going inland and communicating thereby with those parts. He also recognizes through the said diaries and the report of Father Mataró the contiguity of the savannahs of Tumeremo to the said Cuyuni river and the mouth of the Curiamo at a distance of six hours' travel by road, from which the navigation to the Dutch plantations is easy and very short; which makes it all the more dangerous, because of the attempts that are being made to

work the silver mines discovered in the village of Upata, a very few leagues distant from the said Cuyuni, Curiamo, and Yaracuy rivers and the town of Cura, San Antonio, and other towns. And the evidences of the communication and trade the Indians thereof maintain with the said Colonies, of which the said officer, Lopes de la Puente, informed himself, being very noticeable it is important to guard against it with the greatest care.

Wherefore—notwithstanding what the said missionaries solicit with so much earnestness—the Attorney General is of the opinion that it is necessary to issue the proper orders to the said Government, to the end that, utilizing the services of the most expert and experienced officers of the said Provinces, he cause to be separately reconnoitered all the territories of the said site and savannahs of Tumeremo, their communication with the Cuyuni and Curiamo rivers, the mouth of the latter and its facilities for navigation up to the mouth of the Masuryny, where are located the first Dutch plantations on the Apongara and Cosacuro rivers, giving a statement of their distances from the said Colonies as well as from the village of Upata, warning him of the importance of this matter, and to report everything to this Superintendency, with all the information acquirable. And to report whether it be expedient to found at the said Tumeremo site and the confluence of the Curiamo a considerable Spanish town with judicial officers and zealous Agents of the Royal Treasury who can prevent the secret trade thereabouts and restrain the entrance of foreigners, so that everything may be laid before His Majesty with the necessary light, and his Sovereign will may be founded upon the fullest knowledge. Y. H., in view of the record, will be pleased to resolve whatever may seem best.

Caracas, April two, of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

SARAVIA.

---

*Decree.*

Caracas, April fourth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.  
Refer to the Counsellor General.

GUILLELMI.

*Opinion.*

The Counsellor General has re-examined this record, and having reflected on the opinion of the Attorney General with respect to the showing of the diary of Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, and the reply of Friar Thomás de Mataró to the Governor of Guayana, finds, that the report suggested in the second part of the said opinion of the Attorney General is very necessary to a decision of the first point, by withholding any action thereon until Y. H. is in possession of the knowledge and information, in this regard as on the other particulars, which Y. H. usually seeks before determining.

Caracas, April twenty-two, of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

ALCALDE.

*Decree.*

Caracas, April thirtieth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

Follow the opinion of the Counsellor General, and communicate by copy, together with the preceding opinion, to the Subdelegate of the Royal Treasury of Guayana.

GUILLELMI.

*[Copy.]*

MOST EXCELLENT SIR: The proximity of the Dutch possessions of Esquivo to the eastern part of this Province, which possessions border on the Missions of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, has entailed on me, since my assumption of this office, the most careful vigilance, knowing the importance of the subject, as I stated in my Mixed-Chorographic documents and the other documents accompanying my official letter of the tenth of June of last year (eighty-eight), with which I sent them to Y. E. Subsequently, to perform the duty to which I considered myself bound, I sent the Adjutant-Major of the troops of this detail, Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, on an exploration of the said frontiers, who fulfilled and discharged the mission in the terms set forth in the annexed diary, which,



in the shape of a copy, I transmit to Y. E., with the maps which, with this and the previous information I possessed, I have again drawn to show, in the best possible manner, the local features of the land which surrounds the seacoast and the Esquivo, Cuyuni, Coroni, and Orinoco rivers, within which are situated the said Missions and their numerous herd of livestock, the tobacco plantations of the village of Upata, the jurisdiction of all the Province where the tax alone permits the cultivation of this product; the building lumber examined in the year eighty-seven, and the silver mines lately discovered, and expert miners sent by the Captain General and Intendent of Caracas, are now engaged on the assays, which will demonstrate their actual existence or non-existence.

This portion of the territory—the most valuable, richest, and settled of the Province—being exposed and undefended, (the Cuyuni river offering the Dutch free and uninterrupted access to our possessions for their wicked trade in Indians whom they enslave; for the importing of articles of merchandise and exporting of the products of the said Missions without our being able to prevent the same, as that river is deserted up to this point; or prevent the communication of the natives, as there is no Spanish guard or settlement to restrain them, of which there were many examples up to the last war, not counting the two recent examples to which the commissioned officer refers in his diary; it serving also as an asylum to the evil-doers who by their abuses and license in flight often go over to the said Colony or its frontiers, dragging whole settlements with them, as practical experience has proven; and, what is more remarkable in the premises, that the known advantages of this territory, as compared with the rest of the Province, more strongly incite the covetousness of an active enemy into whose hands Esquivo may again fall, as happened in the last war, especially when the latter knows the ease with which, in its present state, he could take it without costly expeditions, as there are no forces with which to oppose him;) the small escort of twenty-five or thirty men which by Royal command is distributed in those Missions is insufficient, or almost useless.

The Indians—people without cultivation or subordination,

lovers of independence and of liberty, which the enemy would undoubtedly offer them to attract them to his side—it is to be feared would gladly accept any change to escape the subjection in which they are held by the priests for their instruction.

In the event of a surprise it is very doubtful that assistance from the Capital would arrive in time to hold the post, owing to the great distance separating them; and much less—in case of an invasion of the Province, because having to attend to the fortifications of old Guayana, the principal and only defence of the entrance to the Orinoco—without a great loss to or abandonment of the same, that assistance could not be rendered without more troops than three companies of infantry and one company of artillery, and these always distributed in the remote detachments of the Upper Orinoco and Negro river, of the Parime, of Barceloneta, of the Caura river, of the forts of old Guayana, and of the said escort of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, which renders their concentration in either of the cases mentioned unfeasible. The fact being, for the reasons given and because of the scarcity of troops, that the details assigned in the plan of Brigadier Don Agustin Crame, are incomplete, and unrelieved for two or three years; and when they can be relieved it will be at a great expense to the Royal Treasury in transportation, whence arises in greater part the absenteeism and lack of military discipline among the soldiers. In view of these reasons, and the others which the wise judgment of Y. E. will deduce from those which in the papers of July tenth, of eighty-eight, I had the honor to present and address you, I make bold to propose to Y. E. the urgent necessity of adding, for the moment and without prejudice to what may seem most advisable in the future, two companies of infantry to this detail, and to increase the artillery company to a footing of one hundred men. That with special recommendation and all possible haste there be founded a town at the forks or confluence of the Curumo and Cuyuni rivers, by providing that it be given a start with the escort of thirty men designated by His Majesty in the said Royal command of the twenty-second of December, of seventeen hundred and sixty-three; it being advisable that these men shall be married militiamen. That;

at the same time that they guard the Missions and carry out the objects suggested, under command of a commissioned officer, they shall also serve as settlers with the assistance which for this important purpose the Venerable Community of the said Catalonian Capuchin Fathers may afford with a part of the ten or twelve thousand head of neat cattle they offered his Majesty, who accepted them with the pious purpose of having them apportioned among the poor residents of this Province, which Royal graciousness could never be better or more opportunely enjoyed than at this time.

God preserve Y. E. many years. Guayana, September twenty-second, of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine. Most Excellent Sir Knight, Friar Don Antonio Baldes.

It is a verbatim copy of the original of its contents.

Guayana, October seventh, of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

MARMION.

---

*Another.*

For the reasons which Your Reverence is apprised of, the Adjutant Major of this detail, Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, could not carry out the first reconnaissance of the Cuyuni river; but of the second, which he has just made, he has brought me information which confirms what I was previously in possession of regarding the situation and local features of those lands which I have always regarded with the greatest attention, both through the personal investigation I made as well as through the data furnished by the documents relating to several events which have occurred at different times. It is known that the Carib chief, whom chance brought into the hands of the said officer, who conducted him to this Capital, has never wished to subject himself to civilization, wandering about making incursions into the interior of this Province, engaged in seducing the settled natives to return to their old savage life, and in the wicked trade in *Poytos*, which he took and sold to the Dutch of Esquivo whom he served as a spy,

reporting to them all he observed on our frontiers, of which we have recent examples during the late war in the movements noticed among the natives of the Missions, which movements the Prelate thereof notified the Government caused him no little care, and the latter was obliged to send, as prompt assistance, the party of men which went under command of Don Manuel Astor, Captain of Infantry.

Although we have succeeded in apprehending this very prejudicial Indian, it is to be feared that his people and allies may wish to have revenge, which experience demonstrates is their custom in like cases; and they usually execute it when their adversaries are unprepared. It is therefore necessary, in order to frustrate their evil designs on the new subjugations, that they find us prepared, and, should the case arise, ready to repel them, and, perhaps, pursue them, should circumstances require it. In this connection I am of the opinion that for the present and until further provisions, it would be well to concentrate the escort at one of the Missions nearest the Cuyuni, whenever your Reverence considers there is more risk of surprise, and the best conditions prevail to prevent and repel any assault they may attempt, and to defend and assist the other settlements, since seeing us on the *qui vive* perhaps they will not attempt any act and will withdraw, as has happened on other occasions. I trust that you will send me all information your Reverence can secure from the Indians which the said officer took with the Chief (which Indians it would be advisable to keep in sight and in a town from which they will not escape) together with your reflections respecting what you consider most advisable for the concentrating and stationing of the escort.

We have now reached the point when we should think of the method of protecting the new settlements which the Venerable Community, under the charge of your Reverence, is advancing towards the frontiers of the foreign establishments; for the further they advance, the more exposed will they be to their plots and to the uprisings of the natives of the forest, and by not guarding against them in time very injurious consequences may result. To this end it is requisite to found a

mixed settlement, giving a start thereto with some families of the more civilized Indians and the Spaniards which are to serve as escort to the Missions, selecting married men adapted to the purpose, which it will not be difficult to find, provided that the said Venerable Community (as I am persuaded it is) wishes to contribute with its part to this important and necessary establishment, and I have so represented to His Majesty. It is advisable before everything to select the locality or territory best adapted to this settlement, and that your Reverence communicate to me your opinion, so that we may harmoniously get to work without loss of time. Since I am possessed of competent authority in the premises, I await, at the earliest moment, the reply of your Reverence upon the points I have indicated.

God preserve Y. R. many years.

Guayana, February twenty-fifth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

MIGUEL MARMION,

To the V. R. F. P. Friar Buenaventura de San Celonio.

---

*Reply.*

Referring to what Y. H. writes me in your official letter of February twenty-fifth last, I have to state that after maturely reflecting on the subjects, it has appeared to me advisable to say to Y. H. that the founding of an out-and-out town or village would never be a permanent thing, there being no place to take the products, while the foreign colony of Esquivo remains, since the expense of taking them to the capital or the Orinoco would be greater than what the residents of the said new settlements could get for said products. But I do think that it is at least very advisable and necessary to construct a fort or castle to prevent the invasions of the Dutch and the uprisings of the Indians, and this at the place which the officer, Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, may have recognized as the best adapted to restrain them.

The truth is (as I have been informed) that if the fort or castle is or is not built at the same place, where the said Don

Antonio Lopez thinks the Indians still will not be safe, because further this way they have a means of retreat by way of two or three rivers, whereby they can escape whenever temptations presses them. As regards the whole escort coming to one place, I find and recognize many objections thereto, and to avoid them it is necessary that there remain in each town at least one soldier, and for the prompt action to which Y. H. refers, I think it will suffice to station two or three soldiers in each of the three Missions of Avechica and Cura, as they are the most advanced towards the frontier, where an invasion may be feared, until the said fort or castle is built.

This is, sir, what it has occurred to me to state to Y. H. at this time. As regards the rest, I remain ever subject to your command and righteous orders in every way you may be pleased to employ me for the profit and service of the King our Master and of these holy Missions.

God our Lord keep and preserve the important life and health of Y. H. for many long years.

Santa María, March tenth, of the year, eighty-nine.

FRIAR BUENAVENTURA DE SAN CELONIO,

Prefect.

Señor Don Miguel Marmion,

Governor and Commandant General.

It is a copy of the original.

Guayana, July eighteenth, seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

MARMION.

---

*Official Letter.*

To the Superintendent General :

At the time I was about to transmit to His Majesty the report of the reconnaissance of the frontiers of the colony of Esquivo, I received the dispatch of Y. H. of the thirtieth of April last, and therefore, I withheld the sending of the papers up to this time, which I do by transmitting the copy of the report numbered one, hereto annexed, to Y. H., to which I

refer as regards the urgent necessity that exists for founding a Spanish settlement at the forks or confluence of the Curumo and Cuyuni rivers for the defence of the Missions, and for the other purposes apparent in said possessions. So soon as the Adjutant Major, Don Antonio Lopes de la Puente, returned from his mission, I sent my official letters to the Reverend Father Prefect of the Missions of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, showing him the urgent need for founding the said village, and requesting of him the assistance of the Venerable Community under his charge for so important an end, to which he replied in the terms Y. H. will recognize by the copy number two, which I annex. And referring as regards to all the rest, to the reflections incorporated in the Mixed-Chorographic document, and the other papers I have sent Y. H., I think they will suffice for your sound judgment to form a true idea of the importance of the subject.

God preserve Y. H. many years.

Guayana, October eighth, seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

MIGUEL MARMION.

Señor Don Juan Guillelmi.

---

*Decree.*

Caracas, November twelfth, seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

Attach to the records of the matter.

GUILLELMI.

---

*Report.*

Caracas, November twenty-third, seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

Refer this record for opinion to the Attorney General.

GUILLELMI.

Alcalde.

---

*Diary Kept by Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente.*

On the seventh day of November, seventeen hundred and eighty-eight, I left this capital with Corporal Antonio Mora,

and reached the village of Upata, whence I started for the town of Tupuquen on the fifteenth with four militiamen, and the meat, *casave*, rowers, and canoes which could be secured in Cura and Tupuquen having been made ready, I started for Cura with seven militiamen, which we reached on the twenty-eighth, and, as the canoes were insufficient, I sent two militiamen to the village, and continued the trip on the following day. On the twenty-ninth I left the port of Cura with four canoes and five militiamen, having at Tupuquen begun the drawing of the plat, whereon it will be noted that each day's journey down stream is designated by two lines from one part to the other of the river; the journeys up stream, by four lines; rapids, by "R;" channels, by "C;" islands, by "I," and roads, by leaders, thus . . . . .

On the thirtieth we came out of the Aguaraya rapids and camped at the Curigua Rapids. On the thirty-first we left Carigua, and at eight o'clock a. m. reached the Yuruari river, and at eleven o'clock we came out at the Coyuni, the trip from Tupuquen to the Coyuni occupying three days. The Yuruario is very rocky, and therefore of bad navigation unless the river is half full. On this day five hours were traveled on the Cuyuni, and three on the Yuruari and Yuruario, and all of this travel is good, the river being about two hundred *varas* wide, and deep enough for any launch. We camped at four o'clock p. m. on the Chimiri Island.

On the first of December we left the Island of Chimiri, and we navigated well up to the Matapi rapids. We camped at the mouth of Perdido channel, having traveled this day eight hours.

On the second we left the Perdido channel, a short distance from which are the Mura rapids, which are about two leagues long, and it is all poor navigation until the Aguarari rapids are passed, then the river is good up to the mouth of the Curumo, where we camped this day, having traveled ten hours.

On the third day we started from the mouth of the Curumo at eight o'clock a. m. having left at this stopping place six *arrobas* (150 lbs.) of *casave* and four *arrobas* (100 lbs.) of meat



for our return. Opposite this mouth all around the cove lies high, hilly land on the banks of the Cuyuni, and at the lower end of the mouth there is a good site for a settlement and farming, it being flat but high land. The navigation was good during all this day as far as Mauparipati islands, where we camped, having been eight hours on the way.

On the fourth we left Mauparipati and traveled eight hours during the day, the river being good, and camped at the Acayo Islands.

On the fifth we left Acayo, a short distance from which are the Canayma rapids, where the Cuyuni divides itself into two branches as far as the island of Iraripira, where we remained this day, having navigated only four hours, as we had encountered Indians from the settlement of Tupuquen, who were complaining against the Indian Manuyari who had captured them and carried them to the Dutch where they were held two months working, after which they were sent back to their town, the said Manuyari warning them to say to the Father of their town (*sic*) to kill him and burn the town, for which purpose he would ask aid from the Dutch. Wherefore, in view of the complaint made of this Indian, and at the same time knowing that he had previously killed the daughter of the Indian Cuayari, of the same town of Tupuquen, I determined (since he was, as they told me, on the said Cuyuni as a spy for the Dutch) to have two Indian guides from among those I found to apprehend this Indian because of his unbearable audacity.

And besides what I have related, these Indians also informed me that three years before, he had also taken an Indian woman named Josefa from the Panapana Indians and he now had her with him; and that this said Manuyari was the one who was always inciting the Dutch to come and burn and destroy the settlements of the Capuchins; and considering that if I did not apprehend him and I was discovered, he would apprise the Dutch and I could not finish my mission, or might be surprised. For all these reasons, I deemed it advisable to take him, and in this understanding I sent the said Indians to their town of Tupuquen, being fully informed of everything that

could assist me in my trip. And as in the port of Cura there had remained forty Carib Indians from the town of Guasipati and Cumamo, who were coming down with cargoes of hammocks and deer skins to sell to the Dutch, without investigating those that might come from Morocuri, Caraguachi, Miamo, Carapo, and all the others that come down annually by way of the Yuruari and Curumo, bringing hammocks (since the planting of tobacco was stopped, they do not bring it), I advised these Indians to say to those who were coming down what had happened to them so as to induce them to go back to their towns, since it was imperative to seize this Indian, and that for this reason they should excuse themselves from going to the Dutch for fear of what might happen to them. We passed the remainder of the day here, and on the following day the Tupuquen Indians started up and we down stream.

On the sixth we left the said Island of Araripira and navigated all this day on a bad river, mostly filled with rapids and falls, and having traveled nine hours we reached the Guornuispo rapids, which for a short distance are very shallow, and we remained until the following day.

On the seventh we left Guornuispo, and during the day navigated eight hours on a bad river up to the Pass de las mulas called Notupicay, and from there on navigation is good, without rapids, up to Tapujumo, where we camped.

On the eighth we left Tapujumo, and only passed one rapid the rest of the river being navigable, and owing to the excess of rain we only traveled seven hours, and camped on the Island of Acayushiri.

On the ninth we left Acayushiri and traveled during the day nine hours on a good river, and only passed one rapid, camping at point Capachi.

On the tenth we left Capachi, and after passing five rapids (not of the largest) we camped at the mouth of the Tupuro channel, having traveled ten hours, at the head of the Camaria rapids, which are two leagues long, and which end at the mouth of the Cuyuni, a short distance—about a quarter of a league—before the Cuyuni disembogues into the Masurini, at which fork a Dutchman named Daniel lives with four com

panions, many negroes and *Poytos* belonging to him. From the mouth of this Tupuro channel there is a road to the foot of the rapids, where the Carib Manuyari has his house; he being the one who watches this road. In front of Daniel's place the mark up-river begins. From these rapids to the fort of Esquivo there are only two marks. From the southern part of the Cayuni river there is a road coming out at the Masurini, where are some Dutchmen with a Carib settlement. Day broke upon us at the mouth of the said Tupuro.

On the eleventh I sent the corporal, three militiamen, and fifteen Caribs to arrest the Indian Manuyari, and the rest of us remained to guard the boats, and at twelve o'clock at night they returned with the said Manuyari, who was found in his fields, about three leagues distant from the port, having also taken the Panapana Indian woman named Josefa, and ten more souls.

On the twelfth we left the said Tupuro channel on our return, as we could not delay longer at this point, for, by reason of the capture of this Indian and the frequent fishing of the Dutch, Auracas, and Caribs on the Cuyuni river, our presence might be discovered. We camped at the Tosqueñe rapids.

On the thirteenth we left Tosqueñe, and in twelve days, which, with the day at Tupuro, make thirteen, we arrived at the mouth of the Curumo on the twenty-fourth of December, where we remained two days, strolling, hunting, and resting.

On the twenty-seventh I started up the Curumo with the Spaniards accompanying me, and nine Caribs, leaving the rest at the mouth of the Curumo to await the canoes, as the guides said that we could only go two days in them. We traveled only seven hours to-day.

On the twenty-eighth we kept on, with good navigation, the river being deep enough for any pirogue, but not for launches. To-day we traveled eight hours. •

On the twenty-ninth we took up our route and traveled only four hours, as hunger would not permit greater haste, and having passed the Guaramo channel, in a half league we reached the port, where the Indians say it is customary to leave the canoes, and presuming that the river would be bad, or that

there was an old, open road, I fell into the error which I afterwards discovered.

On the thirtieth I sent the canoes to Cura, and continued the trip on land with six Caribs and the Spaniards, and to-day we traveled six hours, it being necessary to get something to eat.

On the thirty-first we started, and having traveled to-day eight hours we camped, as on the other days, on the banks of the Curumo, which, wherever we came to it, could be seen to be navigable and without rapids, wherefore I repented having sent off the canoes.

On the first of January we pressed forward, and to-day traveled nine hours with considerable labor, since it did not cease to rain, either by day or night; but hunger compelled us, and we passed the day with nothing but *puruas*.

On the second we continued our journey for nine hours, it raining nearly all day.

On the third we went on for six hours, because, beside raining, it was necessary to seek food.

On the fourth we pressed on, and after two hours' travel we discovered a small plain lying this side of the Butanambo channel, which we crossed, and after one league of mountain we came out upon the savannahs of the Curumo, and we went on over several savannahs and clumps of woods up to the very bank of the Curumo, when we camped, having traveled during the day ten hours. Over these savannahs runs a road to Tumeremo, but we knew not whether it was near or far, and as it was necessary to seek food we remained the next day fishing, and I sent a letter to Tumeremo by two Indians to send us provisions.

On the sixth we left the Curumo, and two hours later we found provisions sent us by Father Mariano, and after eating to our hearts' content we went on and reached Tumeremo, having traveled to-day four hours over good savannahs before and beyond the Curumo, which is navigable; being without rapids, unless a hard summer should dry it up, as they say; but this is for a short time only. It is a river abounding in game and fish, with fertile mountains on both sides. A river

which has been much inhabited by Caribs, for at several places lemon trees can still be found. It flows from north to south.

On the eighth we started for Tupuquen, after resting one day, and we arrived after traveling six leagues. Here we remained waiting for the canoes, which I sent from the mouth of the Curumo, until the eleventh, when, seeing they were delayed, I wrote to the Governor reporting my arrival and the cause of my detention.

On the twenty-second I arrived at the village of Upata ill with fever, having left Corporal Mora at Tupuquen until the arrival of the canoes.

On the twenty-seventh the corporal reached the village with the militiamen, having left by my order the captured Indian men and women at the towns of Tupuquen and Carapo, excepting the Indian Manuyari and the woman Josefa from Panapana, to take the latter to the capital, at the disposal of the Governor, having investigated that Josefa's brother, who is in the town of Panapana, had left her with the said Manuyari as his wife on the condition and agreement that he would sow fields for him, so that when he should run away from the town of Panapana he would go and live with the said Manuyari.

On the twenty-ninth I left the said village with three militiamen and the corporal, and having reached San Miguel on the thirtieth, I proceeded to the Presidio of Guayana to seek a boat, leaving Corporal Mora, the militiamen and the prisoners at the said San Miguel.

On the second of February I left the Presidio in a pirogue with five rowers I secured in the town of Puga and reached San Miguel, where I took on the parties I had left there, and proceeded until the fifth instant, when I reached this capital, and having discovered to-day a canoe from Panapana in the port of this town I sent off the Indian Josefa, as she was very ill.

Guayana, February fifth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

ANTONIO LOPES DE LA PUENTE.

NOTE.—The Curumo river is navigable the greater part of the year in pirogues and canoes, and during high water even in larger vessels. To go to Esquivo by this river much navigation of rapids, which the Yuruari and Cuyuni have up to the mouth of the Curumo, is saved.

NOTE.—The Cuyuni river, despite the bad reaches it has, may be navigated in launches and pirogues, and during the season when it is high, even in light sailing vessels, saving the rapids.

Date, *ut supra*.

ANTONIO LOPES.

It is a verbatim copy of the original.

Guayana, May sixth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

---

*Official Letter.*

Through the annexed copy of a diary Y. H. will learn the manner in which the Adjutant Major, Don Antonio Lopes de la Puente, has discharged the mission with which I entrusted him for the exploration of the Cuyuni river and the frontiers of the possessions which the Dutch of the Colony of Esquivo have invaded. From the map I have made and sent Y. H. in a separate case you will learn (pursuant to information up to the present acquired) the local features of these lands, and the easy communication for the foreigners, whereby at all times settlements, even unto the most interior portions of the Province, are exposed.

In this connection I report to His Majesty, reiterating and emphasizing anew my idea of protecting those avenues. But as my reflections will never have the necessary weight without the powerful support of Y. H., I trust that, in case you esteem them advantageous to the service of the King, you will contribute on your part to the accomplishment thereof.

God preserve Y. H. many years.

Guayana, May sixth, of seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

MIGUEL MARMION.

Señor Don Juan Guillelmi.

[Copy.]

With that of Y. H. of May sixth last, number thirty-six, I have received the copy of the diary kept by the Adjutant-Major of the Veteran Companies, Don Antonio Lopes de la Puente, whom you commissioned for the exploration of the Cuyuni river and the frontiers which the Dutch of the Colony of Esquivo have invaded. The map relating to that territory I return, as it comes without the necessary description or explanation, so that Y. H. shall order the person who drew it to extend it, as, although it could be changed here from the diary, it would be difficult and embarrassing.

As I am ignorant of what Y. H. has reported to the King touching the fortification of the point or site you consider most advantageous to protect more possessions and prevent smuggling with those of the Dutch, I need to have it before me, and, therefore, Y. H. will send me a copy thereof, so as to, on my own part, reinforce your ideas, which will be, undoubtedly, most correct, owing to your local knowledge of the country and the other measures you must have taken with your accustomed sound judgment.

I do not think it amiss to advise Y. H. to bear in mind the question raised by the Reverend Father Prefect and Assistant Judges of the Missions of Catalonians relating to the founding of the town and cattle ranch of Tumeremo, and the opinion of the Attorney General, in the record now before the court of the Intendency, to see if the location the said party suggested is adapted for placing the fort at the junction of the Curiamo and Cuyuni rivers, and founding a town there.

God preserve Y. H. many years.

Caracas, July fifth, seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

JUAN GUILLELMI.

To the Governor of Guayana.

It is a copy of the original—[a flourish].

---

*Official Letter.*

I transmit to Y. H. the map you returned to me with the description added, the absence of which was not noticed until

after the mail left. It came and goes somewhat badly treated by the rubbing on the road. And as I have no other clean map made, and not having any paper at present, I send the same one in the same case, separately.

God preserve Y. H. many years.

Guayana, October eighth, seventeen hundred and eighty-nine.

MIGUEL MARMION.

Señor Don Juan Guillelmi.

---

*Decree.*

Caracas, May nineteenth, seventeen hundred and ninety.

Attach to its antecedents and add to the record made up by the Intendency in the premises, for the purposes that may be proper.

GUILLELMI.

---

*Opinion.*

The Attorney General has again examined this record, together with the official communications of the Governor of Guayana, of the eighth of October of last year, and the sixth of May of this year, and the diary of the Adjutant-Major Don Antonio Lopes de la Puente, which has been referred to him without the map of the territory and rivers which the said officer reconnoitered in the discharge of his mission, and says:

That as said diary and official letters may be deemed as an answer to the report he requested, on the thirtieth of April of last year, the necessity is apparent for the establishing of a town of Spaniards and other castes on the site of the fork or confluence of the Curiamo and Cuyuni rivers, as the Attorney General foresaw in his opinion of the second of April of last year, and, as it appears, was represented to his Majesty at the same time by the Governor of Guayana, according to his official letter of the twenty-second of September of last year, in which supposition, and considering that in the letter which the said



Governor addressed the Prefect of the Missions, he states that he is possessed of proper authority for the founding, and that the provisions Y. H. may have made for the same end do not appear, or whether reconnaissance has been ordered of the site where the Spanish town or fort should be constructed, nor the distance between it and the savannahs of Tumeremo, where the Capuchin Fathers propose to remove part of their herd and found a church (said distance being rather considerable, as may be inferred from the diary of officer Puente, owing to the days he took in his return from the mouth of the Curamo to the said savannahs), he thinks that conformably to what may have been determined with respect to the new founding of the town or fort, the Governor of Guayana may be charged that if he recognizes that the new establishment of the herd that the Fathers propose can be useful for the subsistence of the new settlers or Presidio, he may permit the new Mission of Nuestra Señora de Velen of Tumeremo, and provide that the Royal Treasury of the said Province furnish the missionaries the ornaments, sacred vases, and bell for the service of the church. But in case of the non-founding of the fort or Spanish town to protect those frontiers and restrain the robberies of the Dutch and wild Indians, and watch the smuggling, the establishment of said Mission and the granting of said church ornaments should be denied, that they may not be exposed to these dangers.

Y. H. will be pleased to take the steps he may deem most proper in the premises.

Caracas, October seventh, of ninety.

SARAVIA.

---

*Decree.*

Caracas, October fourteenth, of seventeen hundred and ninety.

Pursuant to the opinion of the Attorney General, transmit a copy of the foregoing opinion to the Governor, Subdelegate of the Royal Treasury of Guayana, to the principal officials thereof, and to the Reverend Father Prefect of the Missions of

the Catalonian Capuchins. And as by virtue of orders from the office of the Captain General and Intendent the necessary instructions have issued for the founding of the Spanish town, construction of the stronghold or sentry box at the forks or confluence of the Curiamo and Cuyuni rivers, and the establishment of Missions or a town of Tumeremo Indians, upon which matters this record has been made up, let no further steps be taken in the premises, furnishing an exemplified copy for the information of His Majesty.

GUILLELMI.

This agrees with the original record herein, which exists in the office of the Superintendent General, to which I refer.

And for the purpose set forth in the above-cited decree, I caused this written copy to be made, covering fifty-four leaves, which I seal and sign in Caracas, on the twenty-fifth of October, of the year seventeen hundred and ninety. *In testimonium veritatis.*

JOSÉ ANTONIO ACOSTA,

Deputy Scrivener of the Royal Treasury—[a flourish].

It is a copy agreeing with the original existing in these Archives, in the bundle endorsed: "State Papers. *Audiencia* of Caracas. Correspondence of Governors and Captains General. 1790—1796." Seville, July 12, 1890.

[SEAL.]

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,  
Chief Librarian.

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias. Madrid, June 27, 1890.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the foregoing date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.

[Translation.]

**No. XXXI.**State Papers—*Audiencia* of Caracas—1790–1796.

GENERAL ARCHIVES OF THE INDIAS.

---

**1790.—Four Documents.**

---

- 1. The Governor of Guayana addresses to Senor Porlier a sketch of the condition of the Province, and of the advances of the Dutch of Esquivo, Demarari, &c.**
  - 2. The same, on the reconnaissance of the Cuyuni, establishing of a stronghold and village, &c.**
  - 3 and 4. To the Ministers of the Royal Treasury and Prefect of the Missions, that they may assist in this plan.**
- 

*Document 1.—1790.*

MOST EXCELLENT SIR: On the 22d of September last I assumed command in this Province, whose local conditions and circumstances make it one of those most meriting the attention and benign compassion of Y. M.; and that, pitying the miserable state to which it is reduced, your Royal clemency may be pleased to extend to it those favors which may suffice to cause it to flourish, so that the residents, emerging from their poverty, may render unto the Royal Exchequer the treasures which are being offered by the multitude of arable lands (almost deserted), building lumber, and other productions with which nature has enriched this vast continent, which, according to the most accurate maps, has as its boundaries the Orinoco on the north, the Amazon and Negro rivers on the south, the seacoast on the east, and the Provinces of Cumaná, Caracas, Barinas, and the Kingdom of Santa Fe on the west, with the misfortune that the number of inhabitants barely reaches

25,000 souls, and of these three-fourths are natives still in the category of new subjects. Agriculture is very meagre, and many more of the products are exportable to Europe, and the direct commerce (for this reason) not obtaining any increase, as Y. E. will be well assured in time, upon more solid grounds than I have been able to obtain in the short time that I have been in this colony, whose considerations have claimed my first attention; and now, more than by these, my care has been enlisted on seeing that the Dutch, French, and Portuguese are endeavoring to occupy the greater part of this vast extent of our territory, and that from day to day they are advancing their possessions; the Dutch particularly by way of the Esquibo river, which offers them free passage, by the Cuyuni river, to the Missions of the Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, and further into the interior of the Province, as there is no guard or any settlement of Spaniards to impede them; and the Portuguese by the Negro river, the Amazon, and the Parime; that species of free and independent Republic of fugitive negroes, which within a few years may become terrible, being situated at the meeting point of the boundary lines of these possessions and the sources of their respective rivers.

In the sea, Y. E. knows better than I, that at a short distance, and to the northeast of the *Boca de Navois* of the Orinoco, is situated the Island of Barbadoes, belonging to the English, and running to the northwest a little more or less the rest of the Antilles. The excellencies of this mighty river are known, and no one is to-day ignorant of the easy communication that its navigation offers to the kingdom of Santa Fe, and the other Provinces named above, circumstances which bring out the importance of this Province, and counsel the necessity of furnishing the means for its encouragement and defence, for it may be that they will be an incentive to the covetous rivalry of other Powers. Wherefore it has appeared to me to be my duty to present this short sketch for the time being, and to bring it to the notice of Y. E., assured of your love and zeal for the Royal service, and that being so addicted to the advantages and progress of the State, you will contribute with your powerful influence to the end that this poor

Province may obtain the means for its invigoration by the increment of agriculture and of trade, the only branches which will furnish its settlement and defence, which present circumstances so greatly demand. And it appearing to me well to bring it to the notice of the Most Excellent the Ministers of State, Grace and Justice, of War, and of the Treasury, I execute it also for them on this date.

God preserve Y. E. many years.

Guayana, October sixteenth, seventeen hundred and ninety.

LUIS ANTONIO GIL.

The Most Excellent Señor Don Antonio Polier.

---

*Document 2.—1790.*

MOST EXCELLENT SIR: Considering the urgent necessity of guarding in the best possible way, for the present, the avenue of the Cuyuni river, whereby the Dutch from Esquivo are accustomed to advance inland, I deemed it advisable to designate the Adjutant Major of this detail, Don Antonio Lopes de la Puente, as an expert party in those localities, entrusting him with this object and the command of the escort of the Missions of the Reverend Catalonian Capuchin Fathers. And at the same time I charged him to re-examine a site which should be the most advantageous on the said Cuyuni river at the fork or confluence it forms with the Curumo, to establish a fixed detachment or outpost.

He performed this duty in the terms Y. E. will see by the copy which I send herewith, of which I have also made a report to the Captain General of Caracas, stating that I consider very necessary the sentry-box or stronghold that the military Commissioner proposes, in order that, in view of the antecedents, and until H. M. shall otherwise determine, you may examine and decide whether carrying this work into execution, the cost of which will amount, more or less, to five hundred *pesos*, is expedient for the best service of the King.

By reason of several Indians of those Missions having gone to Esquivo to sell and barter hammocks and other things and

having brought back all or a part of the proceeds thereof in rum, they had a bacchanalian feast, the result of which was a riot, and the accidental killing (or it is not known how) with lance thrusts of one of the Indians by the priest of the town of Guasipati, as the deed appears proven by the judicial inquiry set on foot; of which event, and of the objection of the Reverend Father Prefect to proceeding with the case in the regular way, I have given account to the Royal and Supreme Council of the Indias, and to Y. E. now, it appearing to me advisable to place it before your superior notice that you may be all the more assured of the necessity for guarding the avenue of the Cuyuni and preventing thereby the injurious continuance of the passage of natives and Dutchmen by that river, as I have represented in several papers, of which I judge Y. E. is apprised.

God preserve Y. E. many years.

Guayana, June 4, 1790. Most Excellent Sir.

MIGUEL MARMION.

To the Most Excellent Sir Knight, Friar Don Antonio Valdes.

*Document 3.—1790.*

It befitting the best service of the King to protect the territory and Missions of that Province which borders on the Dutch Colony of Esquivo, I have resolved to have constructed a stronghold or sentry-box at a point which may seem most proper and adapted, which is to be selected by the Adjutant-Major Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente, the cost of which will amount to five hundred *pesos*, which amount, as well as the other materials and military stores the Governor of that Province may need, will be transmitted, Y. H. paying the cost per account of the Royal Treasury.

At present there ought to be at the orders of the Adjutant-Major Puente, eight militiamen to serve as escort and first settlers of the Spanish village to be founded there, and there shall be sent, successively, up to the number of thirty militiamen, who are to be at the same time settlers, as is provided by

Royal Command of December twenty-second of seventeen hundred and sixty-three; the pay of which men Y. H. will provide without the slightest embarrassment, as I am authorized by the King to act in the matter as may seem best to me for his Royal service.

God preserve Your Honor many years. Caracas, August twenty-ninth, seventeen ninety. To the Principal Ministers of the Royal Treasury of Guayana. It is a copy of its original. Guillelmi—[a flourish].

*Document 4.—1790.*

REVEREND FATHER : In order to protect the Missions under the charge of your Reverence and your Reverend Community, I have ordered the building of a stronghold to defend them. Under the protection thereof it is advisable and necessary to establish a settlement of Indians of the Guayca nation, and afterwards a village of Spaniards, which is provided for by Royal command of the twenty-second of December, seventeen sixty-three, the execution of which I have entrusted to the Adjutant-Major of the Veteran companies of that Province, Don Antonio Lopez de la Puente.

I trust your Reverence will agree with this officer as to the founding of the settlement and village, after notice and approval of the Governor of the Province, as is proper, and that you will furnish all the necessary assistance from the cattle ranch and settlement of Tumeremo, which is to have its port on the Cuyumo river; and since that Reverend Community offered H. M. ten or twelve thousand head of neat cattle, which were accepted by Royal commands of the twentieth of October, of seventeen seventy-eight, and fourteenth of March, seventeen eighty, the time arrives when it can be carried into effect, and I trust that the said Reverend Community will gladly order the furnishing of the number which, on account of the offer, the Governor of that Province may request for the purpose of distributing them among the settlers of the village to be founded, and for any other purpose that may be advisable, as this will redound to the benefit and advancement of the Missions themselves.

God preserve your Reverence many years. Caracas, August twenty-ninth, seventeen ninety. To the Reverend Father Prefect of the Missions of Catalanian Capuchins. It is a copy of the original. Guillelmi—[a flourish].

---

They are copies agreeing with the originals existing in these General Archives of the Indias. "State Papers.—*Audiencia* of Caracas.—1790–1796."

Seville, May 29, 1890.

[SEAL.]

CARLOS JIMENEZ PLACER,  
Chief Librarian.

---

The undersigned, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Carlos Jimenez Placer, Chief of the General Archives of the Indias.

Madrid, June 13, 1890.

P. FORTOUL HURTADO.

---

The undersigned, Minister of Foreign Relations of the United States of Venezuela, certifies to the authenticity of the signature of Señor Pedro Fortoul Hurtado, Consul General of Venezuela in Spain on the preceding date.

Caracas, March 6, 1896.

[SEAL.]

P. EZEQUIEL ROJAS.









**U.C. BERKELEY LIBRARIES**



**C024301333**

